

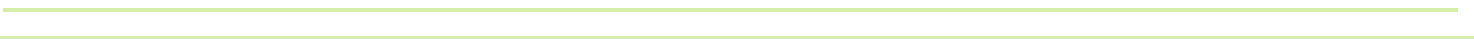


网络文学天下
纵横中文网
www.zongheng.com

御天神帝

—— 乱世狂刀 © 著 ——

Imperial God Emperor



Chapter 041 - 080

Author : Warrying Blade

Table of Contents

[Chapter 041 – Defeat Of Wushuang](#)

[Chapter 042 – The Failure Of The Yuan Qi Kindling](#)

[Chapter 043 – Such A Punishment](#)

[Chapter 044 – Excavating A Spirit Spring](#)

[Chapter 045 – Repayment Of The Ancient Book](#)

[Chapter 046 – The Four Stances Of The Golden Armoured King](#)

[Chapter 047 – Some News](#)

[Chapter 048 – Cheap Mouth](#)

[Chapter 049 – Heavy Handed](#)

[Chapter 050 – Is He Not Afraid That I'll Break The Legs Of His Dogs?](#)

[Chapter 051 – Azure Phoenix Academy, Is Merely This](#)

[Chapter 052 – White Deer Without Talent Has Lost His Antlers, The Azure Phoenix Intends To Subdue The Heavens](#)

[Chapter 053 – The Ye Mansion](#)

[Chapter 054 – Why Are You Still Here?](#)

[Chapter 055 – This All Belongs To The Ye Family](#)

[Chapter 056 – The Corners Of Her Mouth Curved Slightly Upwards](#)

[Chapter 057 – Fatty, Be Gentler](#)

[Chapter 058 – Dead Fatty](#)

[Chapter 059 – The Consequences Of Taking The Initiative](#)

[Chapter 060 – Returning Heavenly Fragrance Restaurant](#)

[Chapter 061 – Little Shang Sword](#)

[Chapter 062 – The First Spirit Weapon](#)[Chapter 062 – The First Spirit Weapon](#)

[Chapter 063 – Going In Search Of The Little Loli](#)

[Chapter 064 – The World's Best Brother](#)

[Chapter 065 – Being Beaten Again](#)

[Chapter 066 – The Second Booklet](#)

[Chapter 067 – Three Sovereigns And Five Emperors](#)

[Chapter 068 – The First Round](#)

[Chapter 069 – The First Kill](#)

[Chapter 070 – Five Consecutive Kills](#)

[Chapter 071 – Entering Into The Battlefield](#)

[Chapter 072 – Choosing To Enter The Wilderness](#)

[Chapter 073 – Not Allowed To Leave](#)

[Chapter 074 – Sentry Guard](#)

[Chapter 075 – Double Kill \(1\)](#)

[Chapter 076 – Double Kill \(2\)](#)

[Chapter 077 – He Possesses A Rare Treasure?](#)

[Chapter 078 – Spear Broken](#)

[Chapter 079 – A True Genius](#)

[Chapter 080 – The Enhancement Power Of Fire](#)

Chapter 041 – Defeat Of Wushuang

The ordinary martial level that Ye Qingyu was in, was enough to face the Qin Wushuang who had one Spirit spring. Then what about after he had broken through?

It was very like that Qin Wushuang would not be his opponent by far?

But this time Ye Qingyu had caused chaos in the challenging matches, destroying the arena, and breaking the rules of the academy, this surely cannot be allowed to stand? Even if Ye Qingyu was a greater genius, the disciplines and regulations of White Deer academy could not be so blatantly ignored?

Furthermore, this time, the group that Ye Qingyu offended, was the entire noble organisation of White Deer academy.

Many people had the feeling, that White Deer academy was about to enter an eventful period.

.....

The ruins of the battle.

Hon Kong, Wen Wan and Wang Yan stood in the air. Their gaze, when they looked downward was filled with a strange light.

“This little brat, has caused such a commotion!”

“The previous month he had always been quiet and discreet. How come he has changed his personality, and become so wild...”

“Haha, I think this way is very good. The killing Asura way means that you cannot restrict yourself, and must act according to your wishes. Only by doing this, can you hope to breakthrough!”

The three people talked with a faint laughter.

The excitement in their eyes was evidently higher than the blame within.

“No wonder he is of that bloodline. The cultivation speed is really too quick.” Wang Yan sighed, saying: “But I fear after this battle, the entire Deer city will have noticed this little kid!”

“This is easy to handle.” Wen Wan laughed. “Today is not the same as four years ago. I want to see, within Deer city, who dares to touch little Ye.”

“Haha, I agree.” Hon Kong began laughing loudly.

Wan Yang gave the two men a look of disdain. “You two uncivilised men, you only know how to use force. We must be careful in handling this and consider the long term implications, accidents cannot happen anymore.”

During the time they were speaking--

Boom!

A terrifying yuan qi energy rose from the Southern direction of the city, heading towards the White Deer academy. Everywhere it passed was like dark clouds covering a city, involuntary causing a suffocating sensation to be born.

This energy was like light, quickly closing the distance to White Deer academy.

And nearly at the same time, from within Deer city, more terrifying yuan qi energies appeared. As if sensing the same thing, they all gathered, their destination the White Deer academy.

Or more accurately, their destination was the practice grounds.

“Who has broken through in White Deer academy?” From the south-east, came a sharp voice.

The facial expression of Wang Yan, slightly changed.

Hon Kong’s eyebrows convulsed. In his gaze, was a trace of killing intent. He coldly snorted, “Hmph, after so many years, these people are still so overbearing. They really think my name, [Blood killer], is a sham?”

Before he had finished his sentence.

His figure moved, shooting towards the sky. He headed towards the area that the terrifying energies were gathering.

“It’s the little trash of the Ye family that has broken through? Hmph, since he has this kind of strength, it must be him who murdered my son Liu Lei! Quickly hand him over!” Another voice sounded, rapidly rushing towards them.

Wen Wan stretched his neck, the joints popping and cracking. He smiled and said: “I’ll also go and do a little exercise.”

Before he had finished, his figure had already disappeared.

Boom!

It was another shocking clash of yuan qi.

Wen Wan had found his opponent.

Different yuan qi clashed together, striking then immediately withdrawing. The fallout from this was as if entire sea of clouds was surging and exploding, with indistinct bolts of lightning appearing. The entire Deer city could clearly hear these clashes, countless low level martial artists shivering in fear from sensing these energies.

The horrifying sound between the fights of high class martial artists was like Heaven's wrath.

“After so many years have passed, these two fellows...Haha, they are still so violent.” Wan Yan shook her head helplessly. Her gaze returned to the pillar of wind, becoming gentle once again. Her lips curled in a faint smile, and she muttered to herself: “Little child, allow me to protect you. You have to hurry and quickly grow up!”

With a wave of her hands, four small almond yellow coloured flags appeared in her hands.

With a gesture, the four little flags landed around the four corners of the wind pillar. It guarded the Ye Qingyu who was in the pillar of wind, not allowing anyone to get near or observe him.

.....

.....

Ye Qingyu was sitting in a meditative stance on the ground.

The centre of the wind pillar was unnaturally calm, as if it was a room that was entirely separated from the outside world.

The surging winds was like a white wall, blocking everything outside.

Endless yuan qi from heaven and earth gathered into the centre of the

wind pillar. Gradually, even the air became more and more pure, turning into a liquid like substance. Ye Qingyu was 'submerged' in this type of pure yuan qi.

It was the dream environment for countless of martial artists striving to breakthrough.

Ordinary martial level martial artists after reaching the peak of this stage, in a flash of fortune would be able to sense the yuan qi within heaven and earth. This was their opportunity to breakthrough. Only by planting a yuan qi kindling within their endless dantian could they break through.

According to martial theory, the dantian of Houtian martial artists was an endless world but it was a world filled with a dry desert. Only by attracting yuan qi of Heaven and Earth into the body and planting a yuan qi kindling, could a Spirit spring be excavated in this desert. Only through using the waters of the Sprit spring, could it begin to nourish the desert, activating life within this wasteland. By doing this, one could shed their mortal body and achieve Xiantian power, extending their own life and strengthening the functions of their body.

And when breaking through, an apparition of Heaven and Earth would appear.

These apparitions, would differ according to the techniques used to control yuan qi. Some people, when they broke past the ordinary martial level, would only cause yuan qi from around tens of metres to gather. While other people, could cause yuan qi from within thousands of metres of form a turbulent vortex, creating a yuan qi wind pillar.

This type of environment where yuan qi was highly concentrated, had very obvious benefits for martial artists looking to break through.

At this time, the location Ye Qingyu was in could be said to be completely saturated in yuan qi. This was evidently the best environment for those seeking to break through.

Countless strands of yuan qi as if they were a liquid, unceasingly flowed into his mouth, nose, eyes, ears and into every pore in his body. Without slowing, it poured within his body.

It was as if his entire body was submerged into liquid.

The body at the peak of the Houtian stage, was currently undergoing a mysterious transformation. Every bone, every muscle, every cell in his body was crazily absorbing yuan qi from Heaven and Earth.

Endless yuan qi continuously entered into his body.

Ye Qingyu's tongue was touching the top of his mouth, his eyes observing his nose, his nose observing his heart. His mind was completely empty, unconsciously entering into a rare state of cultivation.

In the previous battle between Qin Wushuang, the mantra of the little loli, Song Xiaojun appeared in Ye Qingyu's mind. The mantra that she had forced Ye Qingyu to remember, once it was activated could not be controlled. It caused the mass convergence of yuan qi from Heaven and Earth into his body.

The Qin Wushuang who had already exhausted the majority of yuan qi within his body, was struck until he vomited blood by Ye Qingyu, who had entered into a frightening battle state. Qin Wushuang could not resist anymore, and seeing this, Hon Kong plucked him from the battle.

The Ye Qingyu who had lost his opponent, regained his senses and naturally understood what had happened. This battle had become an opportunity for him to complete the final step of the ordinary martial level.

Knowing that his opportunity to breakthrough had arrived, Ye Qingyu began the process of [Forming Yuan].

The so called [Forming Yuan], was to form a yuan qi kindling.

Only by gathering yuan qi to form a kindling, and planting it within the desert in your dantian could you enter the Spirit spring stage. The kindling would, drop by drop, cause a spring to be excavated and slowly transform into a Spirit spring.

This was the most important start of the yuan qi martial path.

The process and theory behind this was already extensively read about by Ye Qingyu in the scrolls of the public library. He was extremely familiar with this process and did not need the guidance of the academy teachers, as if everything was a matter of course.

Time passed.

Ye Qingyu could sense, that the yuan qi within his body was gradually reaching a saturated stage.

Once his body was saturated, it was the opportune moment for him to undergo the process of [forming yuan].

And without him realising, the rhythm of his breathing once again returned to the state at which he trained in the nameless breathing technique.

Under this state, the process of [forming yuan] evidently became easier.

This nameless breathing technique that his father had taught him was as if it was an all purpose tool. It seemed like it could be used in every situation.

Ye Qingyu controlled the yuan qi within his body, slowly gathering it in his dantian.

Although he could not see inside his body, but he still could sense that the yuan qi, as if it was a stream of warmth, moving throughout his four limbs. In the end, under Ye Qingyu's direction, it gradually converged towards his dantian.

More and more yuan qi, gathered in the position of his abdomen.

With the techniques that Ye Qingyu learned from reading, and

combining it with his nameless breathing technique, he started compressing the yuan qi within his body. More and more heat streams began gathering and his abdomen gradually became burning hot.

It was an extremely strange sensation.

It was as if there was a small fire burning from within his abdomen. This type of heat, felt as if it could burn everything into ashes but the body of Ye Qingyu was perfectly unharmed.

As the endless yuan from Heaven and Earth gathered, and constantly compressed, a yuan qi kindling would be formed within his dantian.

This process, would be painful.

As if your body was being burned by fire.

Cultivating was originally a process that goes against Heaven.

Time passed second by second.

Small beads of sweat appeared in Ye Qingyu's forehead.

“Something's not right. In the scrolls, it says that the process of [forming yuan], only need about thirty minutes to complete...” Ye Qingyu was slightly befuddled. His process of [forming yuan] had already gone past a hour and thirty minutes, but he had still not succeeded. If he could not clearly feel that yuan qi was still constantly being gathered in his

dantian, he would have thought that he had failed!

But why was it so much slower than what it would normally take?

Ye Qingyu was suspicious but at this time, he could not divert too much attention to this peculiarity.

Unknowingly, his meditating figure began to silently float. As if his gravity did not exist, he hung from the middle of the air like a Buddha.

And around him, the yuan qi of heaven and earth was so thick that it was like a bubbling spring!

The yuan qi wind pillar continued to have strong winds circling around.

The silver white wind wall continued to rotate with Ye Qingyu at the centre. It separated the outside world entirely, not allowing anything to affect Ye Qingyu's breakthrough.

Gradually, Ye Qingyu became completely immersed into this state.

The burning sensation within his dantian, became more and more intense. In the end, this type of burning feeling extended to every inch of his body, as if he was completely covered in burning magma.

Time passed so slowly it was as if it had stopped.

He did not know how much time had passed.

Ye Qingyu gradually awoke from his blank state of mind that was like a old monk's. His thoughts gradually returned to a conscious state, slowly opening his eyes. He carefully examined the yuan qi wind pillar. As if it was a thin layer of snow under a glaring sun, it slowly faded...

The burning sensation in his dantian, gradually disappeared like the tide.

“The [forming yuan] was successful? Or did it fail?”

His heart jumped. The next instant, incredible things suddenly occurred without any warning.

All that Ye Qingyu could see, suddenly changed —

An illusory world of vast desert, appeared in his eyes.

This was a barren world to the extreme. Sand covered every inch of the landscape. The occasional gusts of wind would appear, sweeping up the yellow sand and exposing a black rocky ground that was as hard as steel.

Not even an inch of grass grew!

Chapter 042 – The Failure Of The Yuan Qi Kindling

A translucent crystal like the world's highest class jade, floated above the world. It was slowly beginning to fall...

“This is...inner vision?”

After getting over his shock, was a huge excitement.

Ye Qingyu suddenly realised that the scene he was seeing, was the desert world within his dantian.

This type of situation was namely the rumoured inner vision.

Being able to observe inside yourself, represented that the process of [planting yuan] was successful. Both of your feet had stepped into the Xiantian stage, because only someone of the Xiantian said was able to possess inner vision。

And the translucent jade like crystal that was glowing with radiance, was the [yuan qi kindling] that he had been forming.

This was an seed of hope that had been formed from compressing vast quantities of yuan qi.

Through his inner vision, the yuan qi kindling gradually drop onto the sands, and slowly buried deeper and deeper. It sunk to the lowest level of

the sands, and in a speed that could not be discerned by the human eye, burrowed itself deeper into the steel like rocky layer.

“This is exactly as described by the scrolls. The yuan qi kindling will bury itself deep within the desert, then slowly germinate. Bit by bit, it will grow and in the end turn into the eye of a Spirit spring...”

A prideful feeling was stirred up in Ye Qingyu’s heart.

The first step on the path of the yuan qi, was finally made.

The world in the dantian contained endless possibilities and was the foundation of the yuan qi martial path. People who had not cultivated, their dantian was just a piece of desert. Only through continuous cultivation and gathering of yuan qi of Heaven and Earth into your body could you begin to change this piece of desert, causing life to appear. Only through this could the human race control the power of Heaven and Earth, exceeding the limits of this world.

This yuan qi kindling, was a seed that could change this entire desert.

It was a seed that belong to Ye Qingyu.

Retreating from his state of inner vision, Ye Qingyu’s sight returned to normal. The things that he could see, was still the rubble of the arena, in the centre of the practice grounds.

The wind pillar had already disappeared and the air streams were becoming less turbulent.

Gravel and dust were everywhere.

Within the air, yuan qi was still extremely concentrated.

The inexorable spear was stabbed one metre into the grounds next to him.

Ye Qingyu stood up and felt as if there was an incomparable energy in his body. It was as if every muscle, every bone, every blood vessel and every cell possessed a limitless energy that was boiling over.

He had a sensation that if he punched, he could crack open the earth and break apart the skies!

“This is the power a Xiantian lifeform can possess?”

Ye Qingyu closed his eyes to better experience this profound transformation.

He was extremely confident. If right now, he had faced Qin Wushuang again, he would definitely dominate and defeat him in less than ten moves.

Ye Qingyu could clearly feel, that there was an additional kind of energy within his body. This was the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth that was currently nourishing his entire body. The next step in his transformation was an incomparably long and protracted process. The

peak of cultivation was to transform your flesh into energy, turning into the legendary Emperor deity state where you became indestructible and immortal.

Apart from his strength increasing, Ye Qingyu could also clearly feel that his vision, hearing, smell, sense of touch, all five of his senses were extremely sensitive.

This sensation, was like a person who had always been blindfolded, finally taking off the blindfold. The entire world in front of him, became unprecedentedly bright and clear.

He could not hold in his laughter.

With a wave of his hands, he grabbed the two parts of the inexorable spear in his hands. Ye Qingyu looked around the destroyed and chaotic practice grounds, feeling a shred of regret. This time he had caused a little too much disturbance, if the academy forced him to repay the damages than it would really be troublesome.

The long spear in his hands shook, stabbing out.

Xiu!

The sound of the spear broke through the air.

The surrounding yuan qi turbulence that was still around, was sliced apart by the strike of this spear, immediately settling down. The gravel and rubble that was still floating in the air dropped to the ground, the

dust disappearing. The chaotic practice grounds instantly quietened down.

Ye Qingyu strode out of the ruins of the arena.

“Eh? Where’s the surrounding people? They’ve already left?” Ye Qingyu was surprised to discover that the students spectating had already dispersed. There was not one single person on the vast grounds.

He felt slightly disappointed in his heart.

He had displayed his magnificence and defeated Qin Wushaung, and broke through during battle. After doing so many flashy and formidable actions, who would have thought these people would leave after watching only half of it. They really didn’t give him any face...

Originally, Ye Qingyu wanted to enjoy the gazes of admiration and shock. He had already thought on what kind of stance and attitude he should have at that time, who would have thought that the people had all left!

A gust of wind blew past, causing his entire body to feel slightly cold.

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, then looked down. He only realised at this time, that he was only wearing a pair of shorts. His other items of clothing, had already been ripped apart during the course of his battle with Qin Wushuang. He was practically naked.

“Luckily there’s no one around to witness me...”

He wiped away his cold sweat, and as if he was flying, rushed back in the general direction of the dormitory.

The most important thing was to first find a set of clothing he could wear.

Acting and basking in the limelight could temporarily wait.

.....

“This little brat, why do I feel he has a thief’s head and a rat’s brain*...” Within the air, the Wen Wan who had seen everything shook his head.

“He looks like a weasel that is stealing chickens!” Hon Kong added in.

Both of them had already ended their respective battle an hour ago. Whether they won or loss was still unknown, but from their outer appearances, they did not suffer any injuries.

“Spending over four hours to form his yuan. I’m extremely curious, what kind of yuan kindling did this little brat manage to create.” Wen Wan said, rubbing his jaw with his right hand.

“It should not be simple! The concentration of yuan qi when this little kid underwent the process of [Forming yuan] is something that I have never seen before. His potential is unlimited!” Hon Kong said with a proud smile.

Wang Yan did not say anything.

In her hands, was the four almond yellow coloured flags that she had just retrieved. With a flash of light, it entered back into her body. For the entire process, she had been safeguarding Ye Qingyu.

“There will be many upcoming troublesome events.” Wang Yan gave the two men beside her a glare. “You two violent people, do you really like fighting that much? I believe that you will very quickly be satisfied.”

“Hehe, in this case, it suits my intentions perfectly. After so many years of enduring, my fist is starting to get itchy...” Wen Wan said triumphantly.

Only Hon Kong had both of his hands clasped behind his back, the sleeves of his hands lightly flapping about. He had an indifferent expression, saying “How am I violent? I am the type of person that is elegant and graceful, cultured and handsome and separated from worldly affairs. I am not they type of brute that he is, I only made a mistake by accident this time by being slightly too heavy handed. In reality, I am very benevolent and gentle...”

Wen Wan gave him a look of disdain, saying? “Elegant and cultured? I peh**! Made a mistake? I peh! Every time your opponent either has broken hands, broken legs or broken arms. You can cover their entire body in blood, and you dare say that you made a mistake by accident? How did your nickname of [Blood Killer] come to be...”

Hon Kong: “Lets...go, and find a place to have a long discussion.”

Wen Wan: “I’m busy.”

.....

.....

The next three days, the atmosphere of the entire first year was slightly strange.

The noble students, who were in the past flashy and conceited, exercised restraint.

Furthermore, the commoners who were led by Yan Xingtian also remained strangely silent.

The originally active first year, became a puddle of still water. The battle of Ye Qingyu had caused many people to lose their will to compete, shocking every student into depression.

Within the academy, when people saw Ye Qingyu’s figure, they were all fearful and respectful. There would not be many people that would dare greet him.

It was as if Ye Qingyu had transformed into a god of misfortune.

And as for Ye Qingyu’s roommates, they had already consecutively not returned to the dormitory to sleep for three nights – they had not even

appeared once in these three days.

Many types of rumours passed through the students.

It was said that the academy was currently considering how to punish Ye Qingyu.

Not only because he defeated Qin Wushuang. Not only because he had ruined the challenging matches for the list of ten. Not only because he had destroyed at least six arenas that had been reinforced by rune formations. Not only because his actions had severely violated the regulations of the academy...

These were all excuses.

But the biggest reason, was the noble student organisation and the forces behind them. They did not wish for the existence of a commoner student that was able to completely dominate his year group and was able to oppose the noble student organisation.

On the surface of the calm winds and still water, hid the upcoming storm.

From any angle, it seemed that Ye Qingyu would encounter trouble in the future.

It was rumoured that as a result of this incident, the teachers of the academy were split into two groups.

One group firmly insisted that such a horse that brought trouble to its herd*** should be expelled from the academy. Otherwise, if every student followed in his example, then would not the entire academy be in chaos? How then, could they teach? They must kill the chicken to warn the monkey****.

The other group said that Ye Qingyu's talents were exceptional and was a rare genius. He only needed to be punished lightly and in the future needed to be carefully cultivated. Little kids, when they were young, who had never been naughty. What matter if a few rings were destroyed, as what the White Deer academy had was money...

Within these three days, the two groups argued incessantly.

It was even said that the city leader and the four military leaders, had also discussed this incident. The organisations within Deer city, whether through hidden discussions or open announcements, all decided on which side they would take.

And as the main party involved, Ye Qingyu acted as if he was unconscious of what was happening behind the scenes.

These three days, he continued to eat and then train, train and then eat. It was as if nothing whatsoever had ever occurred.

Finally, by the fourth day, the dust finally settled.

Concerning Ye Qingyu's punishment, it was finally announced in the

stone mirrors of the practice grounds. When the punishment was displayed, it instantly invoked a myriad of discussions.

“Quickly look, quickly look! What does it say on the stone mirror?”

“Hereby the first year student Ye Qingyu...is erased from the rankings...not recognising the results of the challenging matches...forced to stay in the Grievance Hall for three months...” People endlessly recited the words on the stone mirror. Before they had finish reciting, their jaws were wide open.

A look of astonishment was on every member of the crowd.

Chapter 043 – Such A Punishment

The words on the stone mirror said that Ye Qingyu was erased from the rankings of the first year. Although he had defeated most people on the list of ten, this result was not recognised by the academy. After, the announcement also said that he was punished by being confined within the Grievance hall of White Deer academy for three months...

It was this type of punishment?

Everyone was shocked, not because the punishment was too heavy but because it was...too light!

The meaning of the rankings to Ye Qingyu, had never been significant. After such a battle, everyone naturally knew how strong this person really was. Even if he was not in the rankings, who could really guarantee that they would be able to defeat Ye Qingyu?

Not recognising the results of the challenging matches?

This was basically equal to scratching the outside of a boot. From the start, Ye Qingyu had never cared about the rankings. The reason he entered the challenging matches, was only because Quan Yalin and the others had made him annoyed and provoked him.

And as for being isolated?

It seemed like this was done to protect Ye Qingyu.

The Grievance Hall was one of the most severely guarded areas of White Deer academy. It was not only guarded strictly for those inside, but for the people outside, it was tremendously difficult for them to interact with someone who was confined in the Grievance Hall.

Throwing Ye Qingyu into the Grievance hall, represented that those who wanted to investigate and enact vengeance upon him were not able to do so. For the groups like the city leader's office, such as the Liu family, they could not even touch a hair on Ye Qingyu's body, at least for this three months.

“This...the academy really decided on such a punishment?”

“This is on the surface a chastisement but is in reality protection!”

“Could it be that there are higher ups with real power in the academy that wants to protect Ye Qingyu?”

“That shouldn't be right. Ye Qingyu is only an ordinary student from a common background, how could he turn peril into safety?”

“Could it be that the academy has great expectations for his talent?”

“So what? Can it still withstand and protect this kid under the pressure of so many noble groups in Deer city?”

The students of the White Deer academy were all talents recruited from

all areas. They were not idiots. After seeing the announcement on the stone mirror, they could all read between the lines slightly but could not determine the real reasons for this ‘punishment’.

The news spread, not only within White Deer academy, but throughout the entire Deer city. Nearly all organisations were affected by this announcement.

Within the government office.

Deep within the walls, came the screams of Liu Yuancheng, sounding like a heavily wounded beast. It was said that there was a long time servant of the Liu family, who after saying something slightly wrong, angered Liu Yuancheng. He was beaten to death alive.

Within the mansion of the city leader.

The youth Qin Wushuang who was just treated by the family’s medic, getting rid of the hidden injuries, stood within the pavilion looking out into the mist and rain. He did not say anything, staying silent throughout. He delayed his return to the White Deer academy, by one day...

Within one of the rooms of the fourth year dormitory.

Jiang Xiaohan stood in front of the window, her expressions many and varied. Sometimes it was green and sometimes it was red. Finally, she fiercely struck her palm out. With the turbulence of yuan qi, the stone table in her room was crushed into fragments...

“I was not wrong, I did not choose wrong...” Her face was slightly sinister. She growled in a low voice: “Ye Qingyu, I do not regret abandoning you in the slightest. I will never regret doing so! You are forever a trash, a trash, don’t think that you can soar to the skies...”

The special martial treasure room of White Deer academy.

Bai Yuqing slowly lowered the jade scroll in her hands, turning to look at the Zhou Yu behind her. “From this we can conclude, that someone wants to protect Ye Qingyu?”

Zhou Yu nodded his head.

“Who could it be?” Bai Yuqing said thoughtfully.

“From the rumours, it seems to be great teacher Hon Kong.” Zhou Yu said in an unhurried voice. “But one cannot blindly believe in the rumours. The position of great teacher Hon Kong may not be enough to achieve this. I fear even head teacher Wang Yan cannot achieve this.

Bai Yuqing thought for a while, then nodded her head. She said: “I don’t care who wants to protect him, this has nothing to do with us. This person’s personality is too unpredictable and arrogant. If he does not change, the academy may protect him once, but it cannot protect him his entire life.”

Zhou Yu only carefully considered this statement without saying anything.

But he seemed to vaguely feel, that the opinion of senior sister Bai about this teenager, had risen slightly.

.....

.....

“Is this the Grievance hall ?”

Ye Qingyu carried his spears. Accompanied by the surveillance of two black robed disciplinary teachers, he slowly walked into the rumoured Grievance hall.

He curiously regarded his surrounding environment.

All the architecture, was entirely in black. It emitted an aura of strictness and seriousness, causing a faint pressure to be felt. Around in hidden locations, there were indistinct yuan qi formations, tightly protecting the entire Grievance hall.

Within the air, there was enough yuan qi energy in the air that was it was sufficient to suffocate a normal person.

Even for an expert in the Bitter sea stage, if they wanted to forcefully enter this Grievance hall, would definitely not be an easy matter.

Ye Qingyu looked at this building appreciatively.

The two disciplinary teacher did not know whether to laugh or cry.

Every other student who saw the black robed disciplinary teachers, would change their expressions immediately with fear and respect. Once they entered the Grievance hall, they basically all had distress on their faces all quivering as if they were heading to an execution ground. For this teenager, it was the other way around. His facial expression evidently showed that he did not place too much of an attention on the two teachers. Not only was he not afraid, he had the behaviour of a guest acting as the host...

He really was a pain and a thorn.

The two disciplinary teachers made their judgement about Ye Qingyu. They continued to accompany Ye Qingyu, bringing him through six rune formation mechanisms in total. Finally, they placed him within a solitary courtyard.

“This is the place where you’ll be confined. Only after three months, can you come out. You are not allowed to exit the entrance of this courtyard and not allowed to go anywhere else. Formations are everywhere here, so if you enter a formation, your life is at risk!”

One of the disciplinary teachers said flatly.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head like a little chick pecking at rice, the very picture of an obedient child.

The other disciplinary teacher turned his head away, and through great efforts, finally managed to suppress his laughter. This little kid was too fearsome, he could act exactly like a harmless little white flower. If not for the fact that he knew the reason why he was confined here, he might really have felt sympathy for him.

Informing Ye Qingyu of the things he would have to pay attention to, the two disciplinary teachers turned and left.

Ka-Cha!

The large, black door was locked from the outside.

A bright and radiant rune formation activated on the door, firmly locking the door in an instant. Ye Qingyu was confined within the small courtyard.

His lifestyle of being confined had finally begun.

Ye Qingyu examined his surroundings.

The little courtyard was six acres in size, as if it was a miniature practice grounds. It was extremely suited for training.

The surrounding black walls was at least thirty feet high, blocking the sight of the surroundings. Both the walls and the floor had imprisonment formations on it, even for someone of the Xiantian stage, it was extremely hard for them to jump and look at the view outside.

On the south side, was a small house to be used for resting.

On the west side of the courtyard, there was a small black bucket. After thinking for a bit, Ye Qingyu finally decided that was the object used to solve his bodily needs.

Everything was really simple!

He went to the small house, and stored away the things that he had brought with him. Afterwards, he went to the courtyard and began training.

Since he had come here and was temporarily separated from the outside world, then he would temporarily not think about the conflicts outside. It was perfect for him to calm his heart and raise his strength.

In this world, the foundation of everything was power.

Xiu!Xiu!Xiu!

The long black spear was like a black dragon. It danced within Ye Qingyu's hands, the swishes of the spear sounding like a dragon's roar. Ever since the process of [forming yuan] was successful, and Ye Qingyu had begun to grasp the power of yuan qi, the strikes of his spear became freer and followed his will exactly as he imagined.

After practicing the basic spear stances, Ye Qingyu only felt bright and

refreshed.

But he had encountered a problem.

As his strength increased, Ye Qingyu could feel that practising this basic spear stances could no longer increase his battle power. Especially after reaching the Xiantian stage, the reason for the strength of martial artists was yuan qi battle techniques. In the previous battle between him and Qin Wushuang, the strength of the [Ten thousand kill] had left a deep impression on him.

“If I could possess a yuan qi battle technique, then it would be perfect!”

Ye Qingyu had some small expectations for the time when he could use a yuan qi technique.

The [ten thousand kill] that Qin Wushuang demonstrated, was truly a killer move of a yuan qi battle technique. This was the essence of the yuan qi martial way, and was not something the [Serpentine form], [Bear form] and the other eight divine forms could compare to.

It was a pity that these techniques, belonged to the truly secret and hidden techniques of this world.

These type of things definitely did not exist in the public libraries.

The only reason that Qin Wushuang possessed such a technique was because he was the young master of the city leader's office. He obtained the sword technique directly from the city leader, it was not obtained

from White Deer academy.

For an ordinary student, to obtain the most basic yuan qi technique, they must save large amounts of academic points before they could swap for it. Many students saved up through hard effort for one or two years, before they could obtain a technique that suited them. Otherwise, after they had risen to the second year, the teachers would teach a public battle technique to them. It was only that the power of this battle technique, was hard to say.

Ye Qingyu came from a poor background so naturally he did not have any family resources.

The only path that was left to him, was to think of ways to quickly obtain academic points and exchange it for a secret technique.

He silently calculated in his heart. Since during the battle in Qin Wushuang, he had completely exposed his strength, then there was no need to hide anymore. The things that he had obtained in the previous wilderness training, he would exchange it for academic points after he left his solitary confinement. After saving this up, and adding to this five or six more wilderness trainings, then he estimated he could obtain at least a low class yuan qi technique.

This seemed like the only possible path he could take.

The greatest aim of Ye Qingyu, in this period of confinement, was to consolidate his yuan qi. And within these three months, he would strive to finally excavate one Spirit spring within his dantian, truly entering the state of one Spirit spring.

After warming up with the spear stances, he sat in the middle of the courtyard. He began breathing in and out, beginning the inner vision and cultivating yuan qi of heaven and earth.

With a will of his heart, the yuan qi within the courtyard began swirling like a whirlpool. It caused ripples and waves that was discernible by the human eye, slowly and orderly converging towards Ye Qingyu's body.

Ye Qingyu's tongue was touching the top of his mouth, eyes observing his nose, his nose observing his heart, his mind a complete blank. His inner vision had begun.

The vision in front of him changed entirely.

He could again see an endless and vast desert without any signs of life.

Chapter 044 – Excavating A Spirit Spring

Carefully sensing, Ye Qingyu finally found the yuan qi kindling buried underneath the yellow dunes.

This translucent jade like crystal glowing with a radiant light, had already buried itself deep into the hard ground beneath the sands by a full ten feet. The crystal constantly emitted a yuan qi vortex, constantly transforming the hard rocky surface around it. It was as if it was a drill, unceasingly burying itself deeper and deeper, finding the most suitable position to excavate the eye of the Spring and produce Spirit water.

Ye Qingyu concentrated his entire attention and energy, sensing the constant convergence of yuan qi from the outside. Using the nameless breathing technique, he gathered the yuan qi into his body, and then directed these yuan qi towards the direction of the kindling.

This was the cultivation process of the yuan qi martial away.

Using the purest and most powerful energy of Heaven and Earth, yuan qi, to nourish the kindling, turning it into his own use.

Cultivation was a slow and difficult process.

Time passed by quickly.

Within the state of inner vision, Ye Qingyu could clearly ‘see’ the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth entering the world in his dantian. In the endless

desert of the dantian, this caused the whipping up of hurricanes with the air currents all gathering around the yuan qi kindling. The originally deathly silent desert was, all of a sudden, filled with gusts of winds and sand being stirred up all over the sky.

At the same time, the yuan qi kindling radiated an even brighter glow, wildly absorbing the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth.

“This is actually a yuan qi hurricane. It’s not the same as what the books described when you gather yuan qi within your body for the first time, it’s slightly more violent...” Ye Qingyu was flabbergasted.

Within the public library, he had carefully studied all the theoretical aspects of gathering yuan qi and read the notes of those who had previously experienced this process.

Normally, after the martial artist had successfully undergone the process of [forming yuan], the apparition that they were able to cause during their first time drawing yuan qi into the body, was just a slight breeze. To be able to cause the air currents to be gusts of wind, was already an extremely rare speed, and the martial artists who was able to do this must be a rare kind of genius...

And Ye Qingyu could see the world within his dantian, where the air flows were like winds from a hurricane, sweeping the world.

Hahaha, could your brother I be a genius in the path of the yuan qi cultivation too?

Previously he had only felt that his strength was greater than ordinary people, and that training in body refinement was easier than normal. He did not think that his talent in training in the yuan qi martial way, was also so monstrous?

Ye Qingyu's mood turned good in an instant.

Majestic yuan qi endlessly converged around the yuan qi kindling, the concentration of yuan qi becoming higher. In the end, the yuan qi completely surrounded and wrapped the yuan qi kindling, showing signs that it was about to liquidfy...

Yuan qi kindling turning into liquid!

This was the most important step in excavating the Spirit spring. If this was successful, then the kindling would transform into the eye of the spring, spurting out Spirit water and nourishing the world within his dantian.

Water was the origin of all things.

This was one of the foundations of the world within his dantian.

From spring into stream, from stream into river, from river into lake, from lake into the sea. At the last step of this process, the entire desert would turn into a yuan qi ocean submerging everything and this ocean was known as the Bitter sea. And the martial artist that was able to reach this stage, would leave the Spirit spring stage and enter into the Bitter sea stage.

This was a long and determined process.

Ye Qingyu had only taken his first step on the yuan qi martial path.

Time quickly passed.

Unceasingly, high concentrations of yuan qi entered into Ye Qingyu's body, transforming into raging hurricanes that fanned the flames of the yuan qi kindling.

.....

.....

“En? This energy...”

Grievance Hall.

In the courtyard separated by the wall.

A person with a sky blue hair, Blue sky, opened his eyes and awoke from cultivation.

In his eyes, was confusion and a slight shock. He said to himself: “It looks like, this is from someone drawing yuan qi into their body for the first time. But the commotion is slightly too big, the yuan qi wind pillar

is not dispersing and is over tens of metres in height...who is it?”

He looked towards the wall.

Over the high black wall, he could see a silver wind pillar twisting in the air, as if it was a wild dragon.

“Haha, it looks like...I have a very interesting neighbour. Who could it be? The aura of this yuan qi is unfamiliar, I have never previously seen it before...” On the face of Blue Sky, his signature nefarious smile appeared.

His figure moved.

The next instant, he was right next to the wall. With a fierce jump, he was able to rise to the height of thirty feet, the perfect height for observing the person in the courtyard beside him. But very quickly, the imprisonment formation in the courtyard began to be activated. Shackles made from black characters, without any sign or warning, stretched out from the grounds and the wall. As if it was whips, it snapped up, catching Blue Sky’s body...

“Oh...Again!”

Blue Sky let out a painful scream, a blue light being emitted from the whip, falling back down to the ground.

“His uncle! The rune formation designed by that old monster is slightly formidable...Wait till your father I is fully healed, I will definitely dismantle this mess of a grievance hall!!” He returned to the ground,

hard. Bloodstains began appearing in his shoulder, dyeing it entirely in red. The injury that had not healed yet had broken open again.

But he did not care in the slightest.

As if the blood that was flowing was from a body that did not belong to him.

“Who would have thought that this little fellow would be confined next to me.” Blue Sky said excitedly. “Haha, this little kid is like a tiger. Previously, he even dared to kill Liu Yuancheng’s son, this time who knows what kind outrageous thing he did to be confined here...”

.....

Time passed day by day.

In the blink of an eye, Ye Qingyu had already spent a month in the Grievance hall.

In this month, he basically spent everyday training and cultivating. Every time during meal time, the disciplinary teacher would deliver food to him. But the food was just simple pearl barley rice, bland and tasteless, barely enough for nourishment. And the quantity of this meal was extremely small – for a glutton like Ye Qingyu, it was barely enough to fill in the gaps of his teeth.

The sun rose and the moon set.

The yuan qi cultivation of Ye Qingwu, was undergoing at a flying pace.

Deep within the desert in the dantian, the deeply burrowed yuan qi kindling had already turned ninety percent into liquid. There was only one last step left before it would become the eye of a Spirit spring.

From [forming yuan] to creating an eye of a Spirit spring, even for genius students would take at least half the year. But for Ye Qingyu, he only needed one month. This type of speed, if it was made known, would definitely shock the world.

Today.

The wind was gentle and the sun was bright.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative stance in the middle of the black courtyard.

A ten metre high yuan qi pillar with him in the centre continued to be formed. The thickness of the yuan qi in the air, was even greater than the first day he attempted to undergo the process of [forming yuan]. His body floated half an metre off the ground, yuan qi that was visible to the human eye rapidly converging into his body.

“Liquefy, there’s only the last step left...”

Ye Qingyu bit his teeth.

The convergence of the yuan qi made him feel as if his body was being torn apart, piece by piece. Within the desert in his dantian, slowly sand began drifting away into all directions. A pillar of light rose into the sky, lighting the vast lands all around. Within the centre of the light pillar, an indistinct sound of water flowing could be heard.

This was the most important step, to turn yuan qi into liquid.

Ye Qingyu did not hesitate in the slightest.

Ye Qingyu allowed the yuan qi within this courtyard to rush into his body, not moving in the slightest. Maintaining his consciousness, he did not allow the pain to make him faint. Using the mantra, he directed the yuan qi that had entered into his body to converge upon the light pillar in the desert.

Time went so slow it was as if time had stopped entirely.

He did not know how much time had passed, before this pillar of light began to pale.

Within the black courtyard, the wind pillar that was crazily howling and twisting, also began to be dispersed.

When Ye Qingyu entered into the state of inner vision again, he discovered that the yellow sands that had been dispersed, were now once again covering everything. It was as if nothing had happened. He could no longer sense the yuan qi kindling that was hidden deep beneath the

rocky grounds.

“This is...What happened? Could I have failed the process of turning it to liquid?”

Ye Qingyu was afraid.

However, the next instant, a clear spring soundlessly emerged from beneath the yellow grounds. Drop by drop, it continued to nourish the surrounding yellow sands...

“Yuan qi spring!”

Ye Qingyu could not help but be taken aback, not suppressing his shout of joy.

This was the yuan qi spring!

He had managed to turn yuan qi into liquid!

Not only had he planted an eye of a spring under the rocky ground, but the water from the spring had already begun to spread. This result was so much better than what he had originally predicted, completing the entire process in one step. Very little people were able to directly after turning yuan qi into liquid, to also cause the yuan qi spring to nourish the desert.

The Spirit spring spilling out, was a true sign that you had reached the Spirit spring stage.

From this moment on, Ye Qingyu had completely stepped into the Spirit spring stage.

He was only at the early stages of one Spirit spring, but as long as he continued to cultivate and the waters continued to spill, to reach the middle stages or high stages was not a problem.

Exiting from the state of inner vision. Ye Qingyu began jumping up and down in triumph.

He had finally reached this day.

Previously reaching the peak of the body refinement stage, signified that he was already firmly on the path of martial cultivation. And right now, finally entering into the Spirit spring stage represented that he had attained the next level, opening the door and becoming a true 'martial artist'.

As he recovered from his emotional stage, Ye Qingyu turned to look at the inexorable spear beside him. With a gesture of his hands and a surge of yuan qi the inexorable spear was grabbed firmly in his hands.

With a will of his heart, the long spear automatically flew into his hands.

He was right now learning how to control yuan qi to interact with objects.

In the battle, Qin Wushuang could, using the yuan qi in his body, control the [Great Zhou sword] to perfection, as if it were a part of his arm, the power extremely great. Right now, Ye Qingyu had also reached the one Spirit spring stage so in theory he could also use yuan qi to control weapons.

Ye Qingyu tested it right now, trying to discover the secrets behind using yuan qi to control objects.

He very quickly discovered that doing so exhausted yuan qi at a rapid rate.

After a martial artist entered the Spirit spring stage, every time he used yuan qi, the yuan qi was spent from inside the spring in his dantian. The more yuan qi used, the less yuan qi that would be within the Spirit spring. If the yuan qi was completely exhausted, then a long process was needed to recover the yuan qi. According to the scrolls, spending all the yuan qi within the body, was quite harmful for a martial artist.

Extremely strong yuan qi battle techniques was extremely effective to kill or injure but needed a high amount of yuan qi. After using such a technique, it was very possible that it could exhaust all the yuan qi in your body, causing you not to be able to continue using such a technique. For example, after continuously using the [Ten thousand kill], Qin Wushuang was not able to use it for a third time.

After practicing for a while, Ye Qingyu placed his attention on solidifying the air.

According to theory, after entering the one Spirit spring stage, one was

able to solidify the air. During the battle, Qin Wushuang floated in midair and avoided Ye Qingyu's strikes. From an high position, he constantly struck killing blows, forcing Ye Qingyu into a troublesome position.

After trying for several times, the legs of Ye Qingyu finally left the ground shakily, beginning to float.

“Haha, interesting. Does this mean that I can fly in the later stages?”

Ye Qingyu started crying in excitement.

The sensation was really too fantastic.

He activated the yuan qi within his body, continuing to rise. Although his figure was shaky, he did not fall down.

Half a metre.....

One metre.....

Two metre.....

Four metres.....

The figure of Ye Qingyu began to float, higher and higher.

Within the world in the dantian, the waters of Spirit spring began bubbling as if it was boiling. Surging and gushing, the clear Spring waters turned into a white mist, entering into the four limbs and every part of the body, bringing an endless energy to the body.

This white mist, was known as the inner yuan.

Inner yuan, was namely the true energy source of yuan qi martial artists.

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu's figure was eight metres off the ground.

Considering the fact that he getting closer and closer to the top of the wall, a strange thought appeared in his mind.

If he could float so high, then did this not mean he could just jump out of the courtyard he was imprisoned in?

He could not help but try it.

At this time—

“I advise you not to do that...”A voice said from the other side of the wall.

Chapter 045 – Repayment Of The Ancient Book

Ye Qingyu was taken aback, about to ask the voice why. At this time, he had already floated thirty feet high. Accompanied by the sounds of objects shooting through the air, shackles upon shackles of black chains appeared from the air and the wall, firmly latching onto Ye Qingyu's body...

“Ouch, it hurts...”

Ye Qingyu let out a sharp breath, feeling pain pervading throughout his soul. Every bone in his body was as if it was broken into pieces, and causing yuan qi unable to be gathered. He fell headlong towards the ground, smashing into the hard surface, and did not recover until a long while.

If he was not at the peak of the body refinement, with tough muscles and durable bones, this would definitely have turned him into meat paste.

“Hahahahaha”From the next courtyard, came a cackle like thunder, not disguising at all his amusement from Ye Qingyu's misfortune.

Ye Qingyu sat up, rubbing his back. Apart from being shocked and offended, he could not help but feel amazed. The courtyard wall was filled with formations that prevented noise from passing through, so for this person's laughter to be able to be heard so clearly, the person who was laughing must have terrifying strength.

Above his head, shackles were still quivering, slowly fading away.

Ye Qingyu carefully examined these objects and discovered these were not 'shackles' at all. These were black runes tightly grouped together, forming a dense beam. It seems that he had previously floated too high and activated some sort of formation. That was why he had been thrashed so harshly, and suffered such a painful experience.

"Motherfucker, wait till your father I is strong enough, I will definitely dismantle this formation...Ow, ow, it's so painful."

Ye Qingyu bitterly cursed.

The voice from over the wall sounded again. "Good little kid, you have the same temperament as me. You have ambition, I like you."

Ye Qingyu continued breathing roughly and after recovering from the pain all over his body, his curiosity was aroused. He loudly shouted: "Who's the person behind the wall? Why did you laugh so loudly at my suffering?"

This time, there was no reply.

Ye Qingyu was slightly taken aback, shouting loudly again.

There was still not a reply.

“Damn him, is he a mute?” Ye Qingyu silently seethed, and seeing the discussion would not continue, did not ask any further. He began sitting in a meditative stance, recovering the yuan qi that he had expending on trying to control objects and floating.

The previous experiments, had expended over a quarter of the yuan qi within the Spirit spring. The consumption was definitely not negligible.

Only after an hour, was the amount of yuan qi in his body recovered to his previous state.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head with satisfaction. At this time, something unexpected occurred.

When the yuan qi recovered to its optimal state, Ye Qingyu could suddenly feel a heat activating within his mind. Before he could react, his sea of consciousness suddenly glowed with a golden splendour. The mysterious bronze book [Fiendgod* titled chart] activated, vibrating with a humming sounds, as if it had came alive.

“What’s happening?”

Ye Qingyu was shocked by the events.

At this time, he could clearly feel within the desert world in his dantian, the yuan qi within the Spirit spring was as if it had lost control. It wildly dispersed throughout his entire body, finally turning into a stream of heat that entered into his sea of consciousness and was absorbed by the bronze book.

The speed at which this occurred was extreme.

There was no way that Ye Qingyu could control this process.

In the blink of the eye, half the energy in the Spirit spring was forcefully absorbed by the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart].

And this process, continued to become fiercer and fiercer.

Under Ye Qingyu's panic, he quickly tried to halt the yuan qi, wanting the yuan qi within the Spirit spring to stop flowing outside.

From the perspective of an expert in the Spirit spring stage, the yuan qi within the Spirit spring was the foundation of everything. Once it was all gone, not only did the martial artist need to repeat the process of [forming yuan] to excavate a new Spirit spring, it would also hurt the foundations of the martial artist.

But the suction power of the bronze book, was incomparably great. No matter how Ye Qingyu struggled, even using the nameless breathing technique to prevent the absorption, the effect was not particularly useful.

Within the world in the dantian, the Spirit spring was as if it had turned into a fountain. It crazily spurted out spirit qi, heading to the bronze book within his sea of consciousness.

The body of Ye Qingyu, was as if he had lost all control, finding it hard to even move.

Time passed second by second.

This process, continued for approximately an hour of time.

One hour later, Ye Qingyu's face was deathly pale, breathing raggedly.

The Spirit spring that he had managed to excavate after so much effort had been sucked completely dry, turning into a desert again. There was only a deep and dry cracked hole left, where the eye of the Spring used to be located...

A unprecedented feeling of weakness and inability, enveloped Ye Qingyu's entire body.

He was like an old man who had lived out his life, reaching the end of his road. The flames of his life was like a candle in the wind, possibly extinguishing at any moment.

"I'm finished, I'm finished, this time I'm really finished...This bronze book is too evil, it has really absorbed all by inner yuan. The inner yuan that I have worked so hard to cultivate has become the possession of this Bronze book..."

Beads of sweat that was as large as beans, began dripping down from Ye Qingyu's forehead.

His brain worked furiously, thinking of all the possibilities, trying his best to come up with a solution.

At this time, within his sea of consciousness, the vibrating bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart] finally stopped moving. It radiated with a pale golden light, incomparably bright and radiant.

Characters and characters of strange writing appeared on the smooth cover of the bronze book. One could vaguely see a faint red in these characters, as if they were written using blood.

This scene was incomparably peculiar.

The next instant, something abnormal happened again. The pale golden light, as if it was sucked in by a giant whale, went inside the interior of the Bronze book. The originally seamless ancient book, was as if it was blown open by the spring wind, crashing unexpectedly and automatically opening...

Ye Qingyu's eyesight was not poor, but even he could only vaguely discern the scene within the book, not being able to clearly see what was written.

And then the bronze book closed seamlessly again.

Then, it started buzzing and vibrating again.

And after that, the pale golden light that had entered into the bronze book, returned again.

Before Ye Qingyu could react, the pale golden light spurted out again, transforming into a long streak of yuan qi. It passed through the endless sea of consciousness, as if it was travelling through space, and again entered into the four limbs and bones of Ye Qingyu. The energy contained within was even purer and warmer, finally turning into a stream of inner yuan, returning to the dried up Spring...

This type of change, was entirely out of Ye Qingyu's calculation.

And what it brought, was an inexhaustible energy.

Ye Qingyu could clearly sense, that his body which had become malnourished and famished, once again began to fill with life. The feeling of weakness was completely swept away, and what replaced it was a strength that was even greater than his previous condition.

In his inner vision, the dehydrated eye of the Spring, had already become filled with signs of life again.

The diameter of this spring, was at least ten times greater than it was before, at least fifteen or sixteen metres in diameter. The yuan qi water within was clear and bubbling, as if it was boiling water, filled with vitality. It was purer by who knows how many times, and one was not able to observe any hint of impurities within.

The yuan qi spring erupted in the air as if it was a geyser, shooting over

several hundred metres. The surging roar of this was like that of a dragon's growl.

“My inner yuan is so much purer compared to before, with faster flows rates and greater potential! The rate at which it nourishes the desert has a direct impact on your cultivation speed, this means the time till excavating the new Spirit spring has shortened too!

Ye Qingyu was both astonished and exultant.

He had never imagined that such a thing would happen.

After the bronze book had completely absorbed all his inner yuan, Ye Qingyu thought he was completely done for. He had already decided that this Bronze book was an malicious object of some sort, and had never thought that the Bronze book would absorb the inner yuan and purify it, returning it to him once again.

This process, was like repayment.

The newly obtained inner yuan, was more pure, more condensed and more formidable. It was simply a completely new change.

“This bronze book, is definitely a treasure!”

Ye Qingyu had already judged without any uncertainties.

If according to the normal cultivation speed, by Ye Qingyu's estimates,

he would need at least a month's time before the purity and size of the Spirit spring would reach such a state and have such vitality and flow rates!

But through the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart] absorbing and returning the inner yuan, in less than an hour this was done.

Ye Qingyu realised, he had found a treasure.

A treasure that was priceless.

Just through the fact that it can aid in cultivation, this type of treasure was enough to enter the top ranks of Spirit instruments?

His mood suddenly changed for the better.

“Hahahaha... when luck comes, no one can block it.”

The bronze book he had only found by coincidence, who would have thought that it was such a miraculous item.

In a state of excitement, Ye Qingyu observed his sea of consciousness.

He could only see that within the sea of consciousness, the Bronze book again returned to its previous calm and peaceful state. It did not vibrate or buzz anymore, nor was there any light emitted from it. It was as if it had once again returned to an endless sleep.

Ye Qingyu attempted to communicate it with his will, but there was no reaction at all.

Too mysterious.

It seems like this bronze book, [Fiendgod Titled chart, really contained endless mysteries.

Ye Qingyu guessed, that through the absorption and return of the inner yuan process, the bronze book had also received some kind of energy replenishment, so some change had occurred with it. But most likely, his inner yuan stage was too far away and could not meet its needs at all.

In other words, to awaken the bronze book, an enormous amount of inner yuan was needed?

Of course, this was only Ye Qingyu's guess.

But no matter what, the existence of this bronze book must not be made known to others.

Ye Qingyu's mind was sharp and cunning. He was able to guess at some the secrets and mysteries behind this bronze book and came to a decision.

As his emotions calmed down, Ye Qingyu thought of something again. With a will of his heart, the bronze book came out from his sea of consciousness. Accompanied by a radiant light, the palm sized book again appeared in his right hand.

It remained as heavy as it ever was.

Ye Qingyu attempted to open the book.

The first page was able to opened.

This page Ye Qingyu had already opened before, and what he had seen was strange characters organised in some sort of an index.

It was still the characters from the God and Devil age, complicated and intricate. For a normal person, one look at it would cause them to feel dizzy.

But not for Ye Qingyu.

Through these days of studies, Ye Qingyu had already grasped all the books regarding forgotten characters and languages. He was able to recognise the characters from the God and Devil age, although his comprehension was still basic, but he was able to understand the general meaning.

Ye Qingyu could clearly remember during the first time he had attempted to open this bronze book, he was able to open the first page and saw something akin to an index. But as for the pages after, he was not able to open it in the slightest, no matter what method he attempted.

But this time, it was different.

The first row of characters on the index was not grey but had turned into a pale golden colour.

“This means...”

Ye Qingyu suddenly moved, his finger placed on the silent characters. A sensation as if touching a lover’s smooth skin, and the previously closed pages automatically opened, turning to the directed section of the book.

On the palm sized page, a virtual projection like an illusion was produced.

Chapter 046 – The Four Stances Of The Golden Armoured King

It was an extremely realistic projection.

A middle aged man wearing golden armour and having a golden crown, looking like the very picture of an emperor.

The first instant Ye Qingyu saw the projection, it was as if it had come to life. An indescribable aura of pressure and majesty was emitted from this projection, as if the sky was cracking and falling. As if he was an ant facing a dragon.

The glimmering golden armour, the crown surrounding him, the strange spear with a dragon's head and the heavy gaze of this middle aged man...

This was an image of a divine king!

Within Ye Qingyu's mind, this fact came unknowingly to him.

He did not know the name of this middle aged man, nor had he ever seen such a face before. He did not know the history of this golden armour, but Ye Qingyu could feel, this middle aged man was definitely not normal, nor was he a martial expert...he was a deity!

A real deity!

From Ye Qingyu's estimation, even experts of the Bitter sea stage or higher, would not be the opponent of this middle aged man.

From the day he was born till now, Ye Qingyu had never experienced such a pressure before.

Even if this was from just a projection.

Just a projection.

“The entire page only has this scene, what does this mean?”

Ye Qingyu carefully observed, but he felt that the page contained too much information and yet nothing at the same time. The bronze book was too mysterious, it was an object from the God and Devil era. It was only a pity that it wasn't a secret martial technique...

And as he was thinking this thought, a change appeared on the image.

The golden armoured King who was standing quietly, suddenly moved.

Two beams of golden light, as if it were two divine swords, stabbed out from the Bronze book. Ye Qingyu instinctively backed away and in the next instant, the golden armoured King jumped out straight from the bronze book, as if it had really come alive...

“This is bad.....”

Ye Qingyu directly threw away the bronze book.

He had really been frightened by this strange and mysterious book today.

Who would have guessed that after the ancient book left his hands, it did not fall down, but floated in the middle of the air.

The golden armour King came rushing towards him, completely passing through Ye Qingyu's body, as if it were just a mirage.

Ye Qingyu only just reacted. What rushed at him was just an illusion and not a real existence, it was only that it was too realistic, as if it had really come alive. The pressure it emitted made it difficult for him to determine whether it was true or not.

After being relieved slightly, he then saw the golden armoured King let out a commanding shout. Within the air, he demonstrated four martial battle techniques, at a speed which was enough to make one dizzy and disorientated.

As the moves were exhibited, there was a crash like a mountain breaking apart and indistinct scenes of volcanoes erupting appeared, as if the apocalypse had arrived...

This was the terrifying power of the four moves, it had the power to break apart Heaven and Earth.

It was only a pity, that before Ye Qingyu could carefully observe in detail, the golden armoured King had already finished exhibiting these moves. He jumped, returning back into the bronze book and transforming back again to a picture on the page, not moving in the slightest as if he had fallen asleep.

Ye Qingyu stood there blankly. With a wave of his hands, the [Fiendgod titled chart] floated back to his hands.

With a will of his heart, and a flash of light, Ye Qingyu stored the book back into his sea of consciousness.

“The power of these four battle techniques are endless, it’s only a pity that I did not observe it fully, it really is...” Regret was within his heart. When he was thinking, a golden light suddenly flashed in his mind and a bizarre information appeared unknowingly within his mind.

After Ye Qingyu perceived what the information was, his jaw was wide open.

“This is the four battle techniques...this is the complete entire training process for these techniques...Heavens!”

Ye Qingyu was nearly driven insane.

He would have never thought, that just as when he was being troubled by this exact problem, it would be solved. The four techniques that the golden armoured King demonstrated, along with the mantra appeared within his mind miraculously without anything missing.

This sensation was too wonderful.

It was as if it was a bloodline inheritance, or as if it was something that Ye Qingyu had already known tens of thousands years ago but had forgotten and now suddenly remembering.

Very soon, Ye Qingyu became immersed within these four stances.

.....

.....

Time passed day by day.

In the blink of an eye, another month had passed.

Ye Qingyu had already been confined in the Grievance Hall for a total of two months.

The him who had lost all contact with the outside world, did not know what had occurred outside nor did anyone visit him.

Even very little sound would appear in this courtyard. Crows would not fly above, and the voice next to him did not appear again. Apart from Ye Qingyu talking to himself, the environment was quiet to an extent that it was slightly scary.

In this lonely and quiet environment, the strength of Ye Qingyu began altering fundamentally.

Under the blazing sun, the Ye Qingyu who had a bare torso, was holding the inexorable spear in a strange stance behind his back. The pale golden light shined on his body soaked with sweat, as if pearls were hanging on his body. His posture and stance was extremely peculiar, his entire person looking like a sculpture.

An aura as if he had exceeded his own realm, surrounded and completely enveloped his body.

Xiu !

A light flashed.

Ye Qingyu was not seen to move, but a part of the inexorable spear had already struck out.

It was impossible to see the spear.

It was as if the spear had entirely disappeared in thin air.

Nearly at the same time, the long spear appeared from an impossible angle.

It was completely not in any normal thrown trajectory.

Nor did it emerge from at the same horizontal height as him.

Instead —

It struck from the sky.

Yes, the inexorable spear fell from the sky.

It was as if within the clouds, there was a deity that threw a giant flag from high up downwards, as if it was judging all lifeform.

The long spear was like a banner. Bringing with it a power of light and justice, it flew like a beam of light, landing on the ground twenty metres away. Even the black ground that had been reinforced by mysterious runes, and the hardness that was comparable to tempered steel, was stabbed through till it was one metre deep.

What was even more strange, was that an abnormal energy was surrounding the spear.

A terrifying power!

One could imagine, if the spear that had struck from the sky, if it landed on a person, it would pass through their body in an instant.

Ye Qingyu was confident, that opponents such as Qin Wushuang, would find it extremely difficult to leave with their life intact if faced with

this move.

【Banner of Heaven and Earth】 !

The name of this stance, was known as the Banner of Heaven and Earth.

It was the third technique of the four techniques of the golden armoured King, and was also the most intricate stance.

Ye Qingyu's facial expression did not change, and the right spear in his hand moved at a high speed, stabbing out. A silver flash suddenly pierced through the air, the unstoppable spear strike destroying everything in its path. Everything within twenty metres was stabbed and rendered apart.

As the blur of the spear dispersed in the air, a twenty metre vacuum was formed in the air, as if space itself was torn apart!

【Fierce dragon pierce!】 !

The first stance of the golden armoured king four techniques, [Fierce dragon pierce].

The power of this was comparable to the full power strike of someone at the second Spirit spring stage.

As he performed the [Fierce dragon pierce], the figure of Ye Qingyu, as if he was being pulled by some sort of force, came instantly to the

position where the banner was stabbed into the ground. His body's momentum was like the avalanche of a mountain, breaking apart layers of layers of air!

This was the power of the first and third stance within the four techniques of the golden armoured king.

The endless power of these two stances being used consecutively was terrifying, able to produce a chilling impact.

Only after the two stances were finished being performed, did Ye Qingyu stop.

“The power of these stances, is really incomparably powerful. But it also uses an incomparable amount of inner yuan. With my current store of inner yuan, at the most I could use these two stances twice before I expend the vast majority of inner yuan in the Spirit spring of my dantian.

Ye Qingyu carefully considered.

He was extremely clear in his heart, that the force of the two stances that he had learnt had still not yet reached the optimum. According to the mysterious information he received, once the [Banner of heaven and Earth] it could strike out from sky thousands of miles away. Likewise, the fierce dragon pierce could also stabbed out into the distance thousands of miles away...

Apart from this, within the four stances, Ye Qingyu still did not completely grasp the second and fourth stance.

The second stance was a defensive technique, known as the [Protection of Heaven and Earth]. It was able to completely surround the body in inner yuan, creating a special domain, that reduced the force of the enemy's strike but also at the same time, slowed down their movements.

And the fourth stance was the stance that was the most powerful and terrifying stance. The move involved leaping from the sky, using your own physical body as the weapon. Once it was trained to its extreme, it could cause an volcano to form from the bombardment and causing magma to erupt, turning the land a hundred miles around to a land of death, completely changing the terrain!

As he trained more and more, Ye Qingyu became more shocked.

The strength of these four stances was incomparable, completely surpassing any technique that White Deer academy possessed. Who knows what person created these stances, these techniques could definitely be called as divine techniques!

Thus the value of the bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart] became even more evident.

Ye Qingyu understood, no matter what, he must keep the origins of these techniques a secret. Otherwise, the ordinary man was innocent, but the crime was in the treasuring of a jade ring. He feared that the existence of such an object would cause a storm of blood over conflict for this item.

These four stances of the golden armoured king, was only one page in

the endless pages of the [Fiendgod titled chart]. The power was so strong even now then what about in the pages after. There was sure to be even more strong and tyrannical techniques hidden secretly within...

Thinking about this, Ye Qingyu became more and more excited.

The [Fiendgod titled chart] would become his greatest help in becoming strong.

The sun shone fiercely on, scorching all those under.

The time of the season in Deer city right now, was the period that had the highest temperature. After another one or two months, the temperature would quickly fall, the entire Snow country would enter the season of winter. Slowly, snow would envelop the entire land, entering the long winter.

The sweat of Ye Qingyu was like rain drops. Within this confined courtyard, he continued to train as normal.

Another half a month had passed.

There was only ten days left till the end of his three month imprisonment.

And as of today, Ye Qingyu finally comprehended the second stance of the golden armoured king.

The fourth stance with the greatest power, he still could not grasp the essence of it.

Today, Ye Qingyu was again training within the courtyard.

Suddenly a door opening could faintly be heard.

“It should be the disciplinary teacher in charge of delivering meals...” Ye Qingyu said looking at the time and seeing it was nearing meal time. But today, it seemed a little earlier than usual.

He did not pay attention to this, continuing to close his eyes and meditating. Absorbing the yuan qi of Heaven and Earth and turning it to inner yuan.

The sound of door knocking was heard again.

Footsteps came closer.

What sounded was a cute and crisp voice, as it were the sound of a lark: “Brother Qingyu.” A young girl’s faint fragrance drifted over.

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

Chapter 047 – Some News

“Little girl?” He opened his eyes.

He saw the little loli, Song Xiaojun wearing an expansive black disciplinary robe. Her smile was like the bloom of a flower, standing by the entrance with a large grin, her face filled with excitement looking at him. Ye Qingyu could not help but be slightly taken aback. “How come you have come?”

The little loli laughed joyfully, the light in her eyes like that of a spring sunlight.

“Brother Yingyu, did you miss me?” She dragged her long robes across the grounds and in her hand, there was a red food box half her height. She came bouncing and jumping, bringing the container in front of Ye Qingyu.

Once the food container was opened, a rich smell of food came wafting over.

Inside was various plates of different sizes, all holding different cuisine. Evidently a lot of care had been placed in cooking it.

Ye Qingyu’s appetite was greatly aroused.

“First eat, eat then we’ll speak”

In the clear beautiful eyes of the little loli, was an undisguised laughter. “I know, Brother Qingyu has been confined here all this time. You must be so bored so I brought some good food over!”

Ye Qingyu laughed and did not pretend to be shy. Taking the dishes out of the container onto the ground, he sat cross legged and began eating.

In these two months, he had devoted his entire time in training causing his strength to explosively increase. But he was still a young man, and training too long had indeed taken its toll on him, making him feel slightly bored and tired.

The food of the Grievance hall was also too poor, the food had never changed. Ye Qingyu was not a picky eater, but even he felt as if he could endure no longer.

Seeing such tasty dishes, Ye Qingyu devoured it ravenously, sweeping it all up in an instant.

The little loli looked happily at Ye Qingyu beside him, laughing at him and pouring alcohol for him.

“You little kid, how did you come in?” Ye Qingyu gave her a stare, saying: “The Grievance hall is strictly guarded, only disciplinary teachers can enter. Even teachers like Wen Wan can’t come as he pleases...”

He was really slightly curious.

The little loli said laughingly: “It’s not as strict as brother Qingyu says. I only used my academic points to swap for an opportunity to enter here.”

“Swapping your academic points?” Ye Qingyu finally understood why she was allowed to enter, and was also slightly touched in his heart. However he still gave the little loli a scowl, saying: “You spoiled little girl, you used your precious academic points to exchange for something so useless?”

The little loli giggled, not carrying in the slightest. “Annoying, I’m not a spoiled little girl, that sounds so bad...Hehe, it’s been nearly three months, I’ve really missed brother Qingyu. It’s only six academic points that doesn’t really matter much. My strength is now very powerful, hehe, the academic points are very easy to earn!”

“What? Six academic points?” After hearing this, Ye Qingyu directly flicked the little loli on the head. “You are really not an ordinary spoiled child!”

Six academic points was enough to exchange for two hours teaching from a teacher at the four Spirit springs stage. It was really exchanged by this little loli for a pass to enter the Grievance hall...

Ye Qingyu was speechless.

“Ouch, it hurts.” The little loli rubbed her forehead, saying: “Brother Qingyu, its you that said, martial artist needed think clearly if one wanted to advance and to not be led astray by evil or enter the demonic fire state. You said this was very important!”

“I don’t have too many friend in the academy, and I’m too stupid, no one wants to play with me. My sister cousin is also very strict. The time you’ve been in the grievance hall, I’ve always been distracted and progress in training is slow. I’ve really missed you, that’s why I came to the Grievance hall to visit you, that way I can think clearly!”

Ye Qingyu did not know whether to laugh or cry at her reasoning.

Within White Deer academy, apart from Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu did not possess any more friend. In these days, he had thought about the little loli many times. Truthfull speaking, the fact that the little loli came to visit him made him feel extremely touched.

But the price was too high.

Thinking about the cost of six academic points, Ye Qingyu felt a pain in his heart.

But since things had already happened.....

The only thing Ye Qingyu could do.....was to continue ravenously devouring the food.

“That’s right, in these months, has there been any entertaining things happening in the academy?” Ye Qingyu casually asked, while demolishing the food.

“There is, one and a half month ago, the entire year went out for their second practical battle training. Qin Wushuang was in the limelight yet

again, it was rumoured that he had the fortune to obtain a rare treasure that cannot be treated lightly. His strength has increased in leaps and bounds.”

“And in the second challenging matches in the list of ten, no one was able to be his opponent. He has already entered into the second Spirit spring stage, everyone says, that with his strength he can directly jump to year two without any issues...” The little loli chattered ceaselessly.

Qin Wushuang had a fortuitous encounter?

This is indeed a bit interesting.

“Then did he jump straight ahead?” Ye Qingyu asked.

He was slightly concerned about the answer.

If Qin Wushuang was able to skip years successfully, then this was an example he wanted to follow. He also wanted to attempt to jump a year, wanting to complete the graduation from the academy in the shortest amount of time possible.

“He did not.” The little loli shook her head, looking at Ye Qingyu with a playful expression. “Originally head teacher Wang Yan agreed that he could jump a year but Qin Wushuang himself declined it.”

“Declined it? Has his head been kicked recently?” Ye Qingyu was slightly dumbfounded, nearly choking, forcing the food in his throat down.

The light in the little loli's eye brightened considerably and she said laughingly, "That's right. Qin Wushuang said himself, that he will wait until you've left the Grievance hall and defeat you by his own hands before he'll jump a year."

So it was this.

Ye Qingyu smiled.

"Are there any more entertaining stories?" Ye Qingyu said, holding a dish and licking the plate clean.

"En, let me think..." The little loli held her chin considering, "Ah, that's right, Yan Xingtian has disappeared."

"What? Disappeared? What do you mean?" Ye Qingyu said, shocked.

"In the third practical battle training ten days ago, Yan Xingtian disappeared with his whereabouts unknown to everyone. No one knows whether he is dead or alive." The little loli looked around, mysteriously closing the distance and lowering her voice. "Many people say, that this was done behind the scenes by Qin Wushuang, that he had targeted him during the training..."

"Did this really happen?" Ye Qingyu considered for a bit, then said: "That can't be right. Yan Xingtian has never offended Qin Wushuang before."

“The only possible explanation is because Yan Xingtian is the leader of the commoners in first year and his strength is extremely high. He has always opposed the noble organisations. Some people said, that after Qin Wushuang had his fortuitous encounter, he challenged Yan Xingtian behind the scenes. The two were said to fight to a draw...”

The little loli said in a gossiping tone.

Ye Qingyu stopped, thinking silently.

As it was said, there would be no waves without wind, and that a hole would not have wind inside it.*

The things the little loli said, were all just chasing the wind and clutching at shadows.

Yan Xingtian had always acted low key, giving people a sensation that he had immeasurable depths. If he had really threatened Qin Wushuang's position, and the noble organisation had decided to act against, this was a possible explanation.

The White Deer academy was on the surface peaceful but the conflict between the nobles and the student had already caused blood to appear.

All these years, nothing had changed.

Yan Xingtian's disappearance, did not bode well for him.

After thinking about this, Ye Qingyu was slightly enraged.

The human race in the Heaven Wasteland domain could not be counted as one of the leading forces, having to face numerous enemy races. The destiny of the human race should have been the number one priority, and they should unite against outside forces but despite this, they would still have inner conflicts.

These dogfart nobles and commoners, as long as their conflict did not end, then countless heroes would be embroiled and sacrificed in the conflicts between.

They were really narrow minded groups!

“Oh, that’s right. The teacher, Wen Wan, who taught you the eight divine forms left the White Deer academy one month ago.” The little loli Song Xiaojun said.

“What? Old Wen left?” Ye Qingyu this time, was really taken aback.

Wen Wan had really left?

“Where did he go?” Ye Qingyu quickly asked.

The little loli saw Ye Qingyu’s expression turn serious, she being slightly taken aback. She had only mentioned this in passing, who would have thought that brother Qingyu would have such a big reaction to such a casual piece of news. According to her knowledge, the burly teacher Wen Wan, should not be that important a person?

Within the entire White Deer academy, those who knew about the relationship between Wen Wan and Ye Qingyu were not few, but within the students, it was basically unknown.

“It’s said that he’s been recruited, to guard the Youyan frontier in the border!” The little loli said.

Youyan frontier?

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He knew about this Youyan frontier.

It was an extremely important military frontier a thousand miles from Deer city. It was in the border between the Snow country and the Northern demon court, and battle had always occurred in that area. Especially in the last ten years, the conflict between the Snow and the northern demons court had never stopped, becoming more and more serious with everyday that passed. The Youyan frontier was like a steel nail, located firmly in the Youyan mountain range and extending the territory of Snow country by a thousand miles.

Deer city was a city that was far out from the centre of Snow country.

Youyan frontier was an important defence in the border.

Once the Youyan frontier was lost, the demon court could invade deep

in the Snow country territory and at that time, the first cities to be impacted would be Deer city and the other cities near it.

Every year Snow country would recruit large amounts of experts as reinforcement for the Youyan frontier and fight against the army of the demon court. These things were long known by Ye Qingyu, but he would never have thought that as a teacher of White Deer academy, Wen Wan, would be recruited to defend the Youyan frontier.

Ye Qingyu could vaguely feel, that there must be a story behind this.

The fire of battle burned everywhere in Youyan frontier. Old Wen, you must come back alive.

“That motherfucker, old Wen should have given me a shout before he left.”

Ye Qingyu scolded Wen Wan in his heart, and suddenly remembered about the pearls from the golden clam that he had given him for him to examine. This fellow had left in such a hurry, would he have embezzled it away?

Who knows when, they would be able to meet again.

Ye Qingyu could not help but feel a slight pang of regret when thinking about this.

Chapter 048 – Cheap Mouth

“That’s right, there’s also an important issue. Three days ago, the number three ranked academy of the ten great academies of Snow country, Azure phoenix academy, came to the White Deer academy. Along with their deputy Dean, they came to our academy to spar and exchange techniques. After ten battles, White Deer academy has lost seven battles, losing tragically...” The little loli chattered on. “In the remaining half a month, the three great geniuses of the Azure phoenix, said they will completely dominate our White Deer academy!”

Ye Qingyu rolled his eyes as he listened to this.

It seems, that in the three months he had been here, there really was a lot that had happened.

The time the two were conversing went by extremely quickly. In the blink of an eye, over two hours had already passed.

The little loli stood up unwillingly, saying: “The time is nearly up. I have to go, brother Qingyu you have to hurry and come out. When you beat the people of the Azure phoenix until they piss their pants in terror, then they’ll know how awesome the White Deer academy is.” The little loli said, swinging her tiny little fists.

“I don’t have that much spare time.” Ye Qingyu said lazily, stretching his back. “There are so many genius students in White Deer academy, who needs me to act. And besides, such a thing is not something that we first year students can interfere in. Just let them be.”

“But I like seeing brother Qingyu inspiring awe in everyone and destroying all that comes.” The little loli packed away the food containers, pitifully twisting her fingers. Her shimmering large eyes stared unblinkingly at Ye Qingyu.

“Quickly return.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand to flick her head again.

The little loli hurriedly packed up the remaining containers and avoided his hand, leaving a few words : “Hmph, I’m going to ignore you from now on.” She turned around and went in the direction of the entrance, but the smile on her face betrayed her. Evidently, the close intimacy between her and Ye Qingyu was very effective.

Ye Qingyu shook his head with a smile.

The little loli was too small, only just reaching ten years old. With a child’s personality, pure and simple. This was one of the reasons that he was on such good terms with her.

The little loli after reaching the door, turned around to give Ye Qingyu a smile before waving and leaving.

Ye Qingyu smiled, his mood instantly turning better.

Patting his full stomach and burping, he continued training. Sitting cross legged in the courtyard and absorbing yuan qi to raise his inner yuan. In the blink of an eye, an hour had passed.

The sky turned dark.

Ye Qingyu was about to return to the small house to rest, when sounds appeared from behind the door again. The runes shimmered with light, the door opening. A skinny middle aged man wearing the black disciplinary robes slowly walked in.

“En?”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze fell on the person. Without knowing why, every hair on his body stood up, as if he was being stared at by a wild beast.

“Dinner time has come.” The skinny middle aged man placed the food on the ground.

So it was the disciplinary teacher in charge of delivering food.

Ye Qingyu relaxed slightly.

It seemed like they had swapped person. The person previously in charge of delivery food for the last two months, was not this person.

“Where’s teacher Wang?” Ye Qingyu casually asked.

“Oh, old Wang? He asked for a leave, something happened in his family.” The skinny middle aged man said without any expression, his tone cold.

Before he had finished, a cold light appeared in Ye Qingyu's eyes. With a sweep of his hands, the two parts of the inexorable spear appeared in his hands. He coldly laughed, "Haha, you retard. Your father I, was able to expose you in one try. Speak, who are you?"

The skinny middle aged man said dumbly, "What do you mean?"

Ye Qingyu complacently sneered: "The previous teacher in charge of delivering meals was named Qin and not Wang. How come you don't know? Furthermore, today someone has already delivered the meal ... Haha, speak. Who are you? Why have you smuggled into here? Who directed you? Have you come to kill me? With your intelligence, you actually came here to be an assassin?"

The fact that the previous disciplinary teacher was named Qin, was something that Ye Qingyu had discovered when he was pointless and bored. After constantly bugging the discipling teacher who spoke extremely little, after several eyes, and driving this teacher insane did he manage to obtain this piece of information.

The skinny middle aged man stood blankly for a while. Then, an undisguised fury appeared in his face. An extremely strong aura emitted from his skinny figure, surging out in an instant.

"Assassin? Intelligence?" The skinny middle aged man was like a beam of light, appearing next to Ye Qingyu in an instant. Like an enraged rhinoceros, he lifted his hand, fiercely slapping Ye Qingyu on the forehead.

Pak!

A red swollen bump was instantly created.

Ye Qingyu: “Eh? You’ve dared to launch a sneak attack...Shameless!”

“Sneak attack? Shameless?” The skinny middle aged man was like furious thunder. With another pak, he slapped his head again, causing two swollen red lumps to appear in Ye Qingyu’s head.

“Hey?” Ye Qingyu suddenly felt that the strength of this old thing was slightly too terrifying. Quickly shouting, “Stop, everything can be resolved with words, there’s no need to come to blows...”

“Don’t come to blows?” The skinny middle aged man shouting again, quickly attacking yet again.

His strength was unfathomable, his hands was as if they were lightning. With Ye Qingyu’s current level of strength, there was no way he could avoid these strikes. After several pak sounds, Ye Qingyu’s head was filled with swollen red lumps.

Ye Qingyu’s covered his head and fled like a rat.

But he had already faintly realised, the skinny middle aged man was not a bad person or an assassin. Because although his blows were ruthless, it did not contain killing intent.

After experiencing the fights to the death in the first wilderness

training, Ye Qingyu was extremely sensitive to killing intent.

Pak!Pak!Pak!Pak!

Noises like firecrackers setting off were continuously heard within this little courtyard, mingled with the curses of Ye Qingyu and the begging for mercy...

After ten minutes.

The skinny middle aged man finally stopped.

He looked at the shivering Ye Qingyu on the ground, filled with swollen red lumps. As if spectating a piece of art he had created himself, he nodded in satisfaction. Picking up the food from the ground, he did not say anything but turned and left...

.....

Ye Qingyu bit his lips, the pain so much that tears were forming in his eyes. He could not even say a word.

“Motherfucker, who was that old fellow? How come he was so ruthless and fierce like a tiger?” Ye Qingyu was slightly confused in his heart, wondering in his mind. What had just happened, was as if everything was a hoax.

This was the first he had been toyed with to such an extent.

“Ouch, owowow...that old thing really was heavy handed.” Ye Qingyu carefully rubbed the lumps on his body. Apart from the tens of bumps in his head, his entire body was covered with who knows how many bumps, everyone of them red and swelling up.

On one hand, Ye Qingyu silently cursed. On the other hand, he also felt slightly lucky. Thankfully this was in the Grievance hall and no one had seen him in such a state otherwise his legendary reputation was completely finished.

Ye Qingyu sat in a meditative stance, activating his inner yuan to get rid of the pain on his body.

Within the world in the dantian, the Spirit spring was bubbling as if boiling. A pillar of water erupted from the Spring like a dragon soaring to the skies, the ejected water nourishing the area within several hundred of metres and forming a small puddle. There was spirit fog all around.

After experiencing the purification of the [Fiendgod titled chart] the inner yuan of Ye Qingyu was already purer by manifold and was comparable to a year of hard cultivation by others.

Ye Qingyu directed his inner yuan to pass through his entire body, nourishing his flesh. He attempted to solve the red swollen lumps that the mysterious skinny man left.

As if it was a clean stream that was passing by, the areas where the inner yuan swept through, the feeling of pain and swollenness quickly resided.

It was an extremely peculiar sensation.

After Ye Qingyu had activated his inner yuan and nourished his injuries for an hour, the red swollen lumps on his body had finally disappeared.

Ye Qingyu stretched lazily, slowly standing up.

“Eh? Could this be a mistaken sensation? Why do I suddenly feel, that my body moves freer than before and the compatibility of my inner yuan and my body is even greater?”

Ye Qingyu discovered an abnormal occurrence.

Especially in the areas where the skinny disciplinary teacher had struck. After the inner yuan had reduced the swelling, the flow of inner yuan in these areas was extremely smooth, as if his body was one with the inner yuan.

Could it be.....

Ye Qingyu thought of something, but he could not be sure.

.....

The second day.

Ye Qingyu continued to train in the four stances of the golden armoured king in the [Fiendgod titled chart] at the same time as cultivating his inner yuan. As he discovered more and more secrets within these stances, he became more and more certain that these techniques were incomparably intricate.

Apart from training, Ye Qingyu would also observe the bronze book in his sea of consciousness, [Fiendgod titled chart].

After the bronze book had automatically absorbed the energy within the Spirit spring, Ye Qingyu could sense in these past days that there was still a indistinct connection between the Spirit spring and the bronze book.

After the careful observation of Ye Qingyu, he discovered that the page of golden armoured king was within the section of [Titled Fiendgods]. Apart from this, there was also [Titled divine weapons] and [Titled strange objects]. It was really a pity, that at this moment, there was no way to open these sections.

He guessed that this may due to the fact that his inner yuan was not yet deep or pure enough. It had no way of supporting the [Fiendgod titled chart] to uncover the sections. After hard cultivation and raising his level, with inner yuan, he guessed that he could activate the other sections of the [Fiendgod titled chart].

Today, afternoon had come.

The skinny middle aged man appeared again.

It seemed like he really was the new disciplinary teacher in charge of looking after Ye Qingyu. He placed the food at the door, coldly staring at Ye Qingyu without saying a word.

Ye Qingyu let off a cold shiver.

“Elder, why do you look at me with such a gaze...” Ye Qingyu attempted to become closer to the teacher.

“What about my gaze?” The skinny middle aged man’s gaze became even colder.

“Er, how do I put it, elder your gaze, is as if I owe you a huge debt or as if I have abducted your daughter? It’s really a unfathomable mystery, I don’t know elder previously...” Ye Qingyu smiled ingratiatingly.

“You have a cheap mouth do you not? Let me help you fix it!” The skinny middle aged man coldly laughed, as if he was a dragon that had its mate taken away during intercourse. With a shout, he rushed like lighting at Ye Qingyu.

Pak!Pak!Pak!

The terrifying power of his fingers broke through the air, as if it was a bow that was reinforced by runes.

Ye Qingyu once again covered his head and ran like a rat.

The lightness of the middle aged man was exceptional and had unfathomable strength. Ye Qingyu attempted to block one or two strikes, then was struck even harder. His entire body was filled with swollen bumps, as if he had been bitten by a swarm of demonic mosquitoes.

This process continued for a full ten minutes.

Chapter 049 – Heavy Handed

Ye Qingyu attempted to use all methods to escape –apart from using the techniques from the golden armoured king. In the end, he was not able to escape from the middle aged man's ruthless beating. When the middle aged man finally stopped and left with a satisfied smile, Ye Qingyu was already covered with swollen lumps, even in a state worse than yesterday.

Kache !

The black door closed and locked.

In the courtyard, only Ye Qingyu was left, grimacing in pain.

“Ow...this old fellow...really is ruthless...”Ye Qingyu said, looking at the lumps on his body. He felt that looking to get beaten like this, was really no different from being crazy. But he still needed to confirm whether yesterday's judgement was correct or not.

He sat cross legged, activating his inner yuan to treat his injuries.

Within the dantian world, yuan qi from the Spirit spring began bubbling, transforming into inner yuan that headed towards Ye Qingyu's body. It nourished his bones and flesh, and apart from this, also began to disperse the swollen lumps.

This time, it took a total of two hours before the injuries were

completely gone.

He slowly stood up, sensing the changes in his inner yuan.

An expression of astonishment appeared on his face.

“That’s right, the feeling I had yesterday was not wrong. The compatibility between the inner yuan and the body has definitely gotten even better. The swollen lumps that this middle aged man creates on my body, is definitely not simple!”

Ye Qingyu silently evaluated in his heart.

The skinny middle aged man looked ruthless and malicious, but Ye Qingyu had never sensed a shred of killing intent from him. His strange powerful fingers, on the surface seemed incomparably powerful, and even metal armour would not be able to withstand this type of power. But when used on Ye Qingyu’s body, it only caused swollen lumps to appear...

From yesterday, Ye Qingyu had already suspected that the skinny middle aged man was a friend and not an enemy.

Now he was even more sure.

Right now, Ye Qingyu could finally know for certain that the skinny middle aged man was aiding him. Through this type of peculiar finger technique, he broke through the blockages on his body.

These places, after Ye Qingyu carefully examined, was the places that was not yet refined when he was at the ordinary martial stage – since Ye Qingyu used less than three months of time to walk a path normal people would need more than a year to walk, even if his talent was even greater, there was inevitably some omissions.

This type of situation did not only appear on Ye Qingyu.

Normally speaking, when a martial artist left the ordinary martial stage, they did not train every part of their body to the extreme. There would typically be a weak spot or dead vitals that they could not train. Once the martial entered the Spirit spring stage, and was able to control the Xiantian yuan power, and spending years upon years, only then could they completely train these weak points.

The finger technique of the skinny middle aged man was mysterious and his observation was poisonously sharp. Just from a glance, he could tell that there were points on Ye Qingyu's body that was not refined to its fullest, and using his yuan qi, marked it out.

This could be counted as a help in disguise to Ye Qingyu.

It was only that his methods was a little too ruthless. His finger strikes had made him so sore, that Ye Qingyu's cries were like the tragic howling of a wolf.

“The old fellow seems like he doesn't like me very much. Then why does he help me?” Ye Qingyu was puzzled, not able to think through this point.

.....

The next few days, similar things happened.

Everyday, the skinny middle aged man would appear with the food. And every time he would beat Ye Qingyu till he was badly battered, his entire body swollen with lumps as if he wanted to beat Ye Qingyu to death...

And Ye Qingyu could not resist, and could only sorrowfully accept this treatment.

Several times, Ye Qingyu's cheap mouth acted up again. He could not endure and insulted the middle aged man through a few phrases. The result was that Ye Qingyu's teeth was nearly knocked out by the skinny man, making Ye Qingyu much more honest from then on.

Every time he was beaten, Ye Qingyu would activate his inner yuan to treat the injuries, spending a significant amount of time. Afterwards, he would find that his body would become more and more translucent, without any flaws whatsoever. The blockages that would block the inner yuan, numbered less and less.

There once was grandmasters of rune formations who compared inner yuan as a surging river and the human body as the river bed. Only by having less rocks and sand in the river bed, would the river flow with even more power and strength.

Ye Qingyu discovered, that after the skinny middle aged man's beatings

the impurities and blockages within his body became fewer and fewer. His inner yuan passed through his meridians and muscles without any blockages whatsoever, able to produce an even greater force.

These types of days, continued.

Ye Qingyu continued to have a bad mouth, be beaten, treating injuries and raising his strength every day, awaiting the end of his sentence of confinement.

Time passed by quickly.

Today.

Was the last day of Ye Qingyu's confinement.

When the first rays of dawn shined past the northwest corner of the wall, this was the time that Ye Qingyu's confinement was truly over.

He was imprisoned for three months in such a strange and isolated place, and only able to see black walls and blue sky. Apart from this, there would be very few other colours in his view. Although Ye Qingyu had long become accustomed to being alone, but even he felt bored and restless being confined here for so long.

This day, Ye Qingyu did not continue to train.

He sat there cross legged, considering the things he should do when he

left. Right now, he had already truly entered into the Spirit spring stage, and could be counted as a little expert. There was no longer a need to be afraid of the slightest thing.

Especially some of the left over business he had, he needed to settle quickly.

What the Ye family lost in these four years, he would bit by bit, take it back.

The inherited family sword, some properties, the Ye family house... these things did not mean much to the Ye Qingyu today, but he knew , he must take it all back.

This was not due to incentives.

It was due to dignity...and emotions.

But only second year class students, had the right to leave and go from White Deer academy as they please. The first year students was still in a period where they were strictly controlled, and restricted from leaving the area of their year...Therefore, the most important thing for Ye Qingyu to do when he left, was to attempt to jump a class!

Jumping a class !

Quickly finished the lessons of the first year, and directly entering the second year.

For the current Ye Qingyu, this did not poses too great a difficulty. His strength was by far enough, and he only had to pass through some tests before he could succeed.

Apart from this, was some miscellaneous things. Such as finding a suitable spirit weapon and placing it to be submerged within the Spirit spring, becoming his life spirit weapon. The inexorable spear's force and impact was great, but in the end it was not a Spirit weapon

The sunlight was not as harsh as it was a month ago.

Ye Qingyu's torso was bare and his thick black hair flowed down from his back like a waterfall, directly to the ground. A masculine beauty was emitted from his body, and a strange aura of strength completely surrounded his body.

What was strange, was that even after the sun had already set, the skinny middle aged man still did not appear.

The disciplinary teacher was swapped again, and this person was like a mute. No matter what Ye Qingyu asked, he only shook his head and did not speak.

Originally, Ye Qingyu wanted to control his bad mouth and wanted to properly thank the strange skinny middle aged man. It looks like that Ye Qingyu would not have this opportunity.

It was a quiet night.

Ye Qingyu laid down on the black ground that was still faintly warm from the heat of the sun.

The vast and starry sky had a brilliance that was as if diamonds was studded onto the pitch black night. This familiar sight, was as if Ye Qignyu had once again saw his parents kind and gentle faces on the starry night...

It was unknown when tears began dripping down Ye Qingyu's cheeks.

The memories that he wanted to forget four years ago, once again came right after another.

“Mother, father, are you faring well in the embrace of the stars? Your child has already grown up, your child is already an expert at the Spirit spring stage...Father, don't worry, I still remember your last words. I will definitely go the court of the royal family of Snow country, and find the secret you have left for me...”

“I don't care who it is, I don't care which forces caused such a bloody scene to be created. I will definitely investigate who was involved in this. I swear, I will definitely make them pay for blood with their blood!”

Ye Qingyu continued to speak to himself.

He did not know why, but tonight, he did not want to train at all. He only wanted to lie on his back and look at the starry skies, as if time had returned. As if he had returned to the joyful days, the days where he was

with his parents, sitting in seats at the ancestral house looking at the stars...

Who knows when, did he finally sleep.

Ye Qingyu had never wanted to allow his life to become devoted to vengeance, he did not want revenge to cover up all the other bright colours of his life. In these past four years, he had thought he had long seen through revenge...

But at this instant, he only understood right then. Revenge, was not something that could be easily let go.

.....

On the ninety first day, the first ray of the golden dawn, shined on the black Grievance hall.

Two disciplinary teachers unlocked the rune formation door.

“Time is up, leave.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He had long packed his belonging, walking directly to the door.,

After walking several steps, Ye Qingyu suddenly thought of something.

He looked at the wall, shouting : “Hey, I’m leaving. I don’t know who’s in the wall beside me, but if you hear my words, remember, once you come out I’ll treat you to alcohol!”

These words was said to his mysterious neighbour over the wall.

Once he had finished, Ye Qingyu walked with large strides outside the Grievance hall.

.....

“Treat me to alcohol? Haha, this little fellow, is quite interesting...”

Blue Sky sat quietly in his courtyard.

The ending of his solitary confinement was not yet over, and there was still a decent amount of time till the end.

But he was not rushed in the slightest.

He looked at the slowly rising red sun, squinting his eyes. He thought of something and sighed, saying : “Drinking alcohol is of course good, but, the beautiful days that one is able to sit and drink, is quickly coming to an end...”

Chapter 050 – Is He Not Afraid That I'll Break The Legs Of His Dogs?

Ye Qingyu was released.

This news was as if it had grown wings, spreading quickly throughout the entire first year area of White Deer academy. Until today, very many still remembered what happened three months ago.

That day, a person that was not in the top fifty as all, using two spears, pierced through the high up geniuses in the list of ten. He destroyed six arenas, defeated Qin Wushuang and broke past the ordinary martial stage...

The things that happened on that day was like a legend.

Many people, when they thought back to the events of that day, they were still incomparably shocked, the blood in their bodies boiling.

And today, the person who created this legend would end his solitary confinement and emerge.

Three months had already passed, how strong would he have gotten?

In an instant, many students of White Deer academy began intentionally gathering near the entrance of the Grievance hall, hoping to get a glance of something...

Kache !

The black door with runes and formations on it began to open.

Numerous eyes turned to gaze at this.

Under the sunlight, the bearded youth walked out, with his black hair hanging down to his thighs. The one metre and a bit long spear holster hung from his back. He seemed more haggard and skinny, and the unbridled recklessness evident in his expression seemed to have been moderated.

“He’s come out!”

“It’s Ye Qingyu!”

“It seems he’s slightly gaunt and exhausted!”

“He’s been confined for three months, with an entire ninety days without any teachings or cultivation resources. I estimate, that Ye Qingyu’s strength has not improved that much!”

“That’s’ right, the Grievance hall is not that suitable for training.”

“Wah wah, quickly look. Qin Wushaung’s people has appeared, with Quan Yalin leading...Through my estimation, the second part of this story, is about to begin!”

The students all discussed heatedly.

Unknowingly, many people had already placed Ye Qingyu as one of their focal points. From the moment that Ye Qingyu stepped out from the Grievance hall, gazes could not help but be gathered onto him.

But they only looked from afar.

He had offended the entire noble organisation in the academy and was a thorn in countless people's eyes. The brighter and more radiant Ye Qingyu was, meant that less and less people would want to be his friend. The waves he had caused, after three months, how peaceful could it have gotten?

No one knew.

There were even some students that were itching to act against Ye Qingyu. In these three months, their strengths had increased explosively. With such a good opportunity to prove themselves, if they were able to defeat ye Qingyu, this was a chance to become close to the noble organisation and be famed throughout. Was this not fame and fortune both at once?

Within the crowd, only one person was different —

“Brother Qingyu!!”

The little loli Song Xiaojun came bouncing and cheering, charging straight at Ye Qingyu.

She did not have the slightest care or restraint, and was only acting on her impulses from the bottom of her heart. She was like a little deer that had finally met her old friend, with an undisguised joy and delight.

“Brother Qingyu you’ve finally been released!” The little loli grabbed Ye Qingyu’s hands, jumping up and down, wantonly cheering.

Ye Qingyu patted the little loli on the head, being infected by her happiness. A smile appeared on his face.

The people nearby had complicated feelings when they saw this scene.

The little loli Song Xiaojun was different from the ‘cold and haughty’ Ye Qingyu. She was a simple and innocent little girl, and as cute as if she was a jade doll. No matter who she faced, she was passionate and happy to help without any malicious intentions, able to make many friends in the year.

And furthermore, she was one of the people that head teacher Wang Yan had high expectations for. Her hidden talent was extremely exceptional. In the four months that she had been in the academy, she gradually emerged with her strength growing rapidly. This attracted the attention of many organisations and caused her to have great relationships within the entire first year.

But many people knew, that even though Song Xiaojun had many

friends, she only had one best friend—

Ye Qingyu.

The Ye Qingyu who had no friend apart from her in the entire class of two thousand.

Many people did not understand how Ye Qingyu and Song Xiaojun were able to become friends. No matter considering aura, the way they did things, or their cultivation, they were all different. They had nothing in common at all.

Some people was envious of Ye Qingyu because he was able to obtain the true friendship of such an innocent and naïve little girl, Song Xiaojun.

And some people were envious of Song Xiaojun because she was able to obtain the true friendship of someone as tyrannical and with a terrifying strength, the Demon king Ye Qingyu.

For Ye Qingyu, Song Xiaojun did not care about wasting her precious academic points to obtain the right to enter the Grievance hall.

And for Song Xiaojun, Ye Qingyu was furious and completely destroyed the entire noble organisation in first year using his spears. The high and mighty Qin Wushuang, son of the city leader was also stamped under his feet...

Such a friendship, was the object of envy for numerous students.

It was a pity that many people could only be envious, because they would never ever be able to obtain such a friendship.

From the crowd, Song Qingluo also looked upon this scene enviously.

She was one of the only students to retain her position in the list of ten within the challenging matches. Song Qingluo's gorgeous appearance, exceptional talent and her wealthy background made her become the goddess of countless male students in first year.

She was also a person many people admired.

But at this moment, Song Qingluo was envious of her innocent and silly little cousin.

A complicated expression flashed past Song Qingluo's beautiful face. She finally grew serious, as if making some sort of decision. Her red lips opened, crying out Song Xiaojun's name...

From far away.

The Song Xiaojun who was laughing like a lark, hearing Song Qingluo's voice was as if she had instantly turned into a fossil. Her expression instantly turned lonely and she lightly let go of Ye Qingyu's arm...

She turned around and saw, her cousin's strict expression with an

unquestionable authority.

“Brother Qingyu, I have something to do, I’ll leave first...” The little loli said, her face filled with apologies, as if she was a little white flower that had frosted over.

Ye Qingyu looked at the Song Qingluo from far away and then regarded the listless little loli. He nodded his head, saying: “Go.”

The little loli reluctantly waved goodbye.

He saw her walking far off, standing in front of her cousin sheepishly. Song Qingluo seemed to have said some words, then dragged the little loli away, without looking back....

Ye Qingyu smiled, without saying anything.

He knew why Song Qingluo dragged the Song Xiaojun away in such a rush.

Compared to the simple and silly Song Xiaojun, Song Qingluo was more suited to become the future leader of the Qingluo merchant company. Her thoughts were cautious, and the way she did things was like thunder and wind, without wading in water or mud in the slightest*. It was only...At such a young age, to consider everything, could she really be happy?

Ye Qingyu’s gaze surveyed everywhere around him, walking towards the dormitory.

After walking a few steps...

Xiu!

A object pierced through the air, a gentle breeze blowing past.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand.

The red and golden gilded challenge letter was held between his index and ring finger.

He lifted his eyebrows, looking at the noble students walking their way out of the crowd.

Quan Yalin walked out in front of the group, his expression holding a deliberate arrogance and haughtiness. He coldly sneered: “Three days, number one arena. Senior brother Wushuang challenges you, one battle to decide the victor.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

Quan Yalin continued to coldly sneer: “What? You don’t dare? It looks like you don’t know, senior brother Wushuang’s strength has increased explosively, and he has had a fortuitous encounter. He is already a dragon soaring in the skies, and is not someone that a commoner scrap can be compared to...”

Before he had finished.

Xiu!

Ye Qingyu's hand moved.

The red challenge letter was like a bolt of red lightning, tearing apart space. Brushing past Quan Yalin's head with a sharp sound, it buried itself into an ornamental fake mountain twenty metres away

Quan Yalin's figure stopped, his mouth wide open. The sneering smile on his face had frozen and in his eyes was a terror that was hard to control.

Cold sweat dripped from his forehead.

A light wind blew past.

Hair rustled and fell.

A large bunch of Quan Yalin's hair, fell cleanly to the floor. It exposed his white scalp, as if the sharpest razor had passed by. His skin was not broken in the slightest, neat and tidy....

Countless eyes fell on Quan Yalin's head and then towards the fake mountain far off.

On the ornamental mountain, there was a deep fissure.

The challenge letter was soft and gentle, and was as hard as a goose feather to impart any force into. But in Ye Qingyu's hands, it completely entered into the boulder, only leaving a deep crack where it had passed through, as if it was cut open by a divine weapon....

In this instant, countless exclamations of shock sounded.

With a wave of his hands, Ye Qingyu had broken the courage of countless people.

Especially the people who thought in these three months, their strengths had completely exceed his. Those thinking that Ye Qingyu did not receive a systematic or complete training within Grievance Hall. Those who had wanted to treat Ye Qingyu as a stepping stone, in this moment, their ambitions that burned like fire was doused by a bucket of icy cold water. Before the flames had even begin to burn, it was completely extinguished!

No matter considering the intricate control to only cut Quan Yalin's hair, or the strength needed to crack the boulder, this was not a power that an ordinary Spirit spring expert should be able to possess.

The power of Ye Qingyu, in these three months, had grown to what heights?

Many people were dumbfounded by this scene.

Ye Qingyu swept his gaze around the crowd.

No one dared to meet his eyes.

In these three months, Qin Wushuang's rapid growth was like a divine king, shining a light that could not be ignored. Then the Ye Qingyu who had come out from the black Grievance hall, demonstrating a destructive power similar to that of a Demon King, was also something they could not face.

A sudden blast of wind.

The black hair of Ye Qingyu began dancing wildly, as if a terrifying black flame was burning.

Step by step, he walked out of the crowd.

The students looked at his back, an undisguised fear on their faces.

“Losers, should have the self awareness of a loser.” The voice of Ye Qingyu sounded from far away the path. “Qin Wushuang wants to challenge me? Then tell him to come personally. Always telling his dogs to bark, is he not afraid that I’ll break his dogs’ legs?”

His voice sounded.

His figure disappeared.

Everyone was silent.

Quan Yalin and other noble students were as silent as if they were mourning for their deceased mother.

Half a second later.

In the eyes of some students, a light began to burn in their eyes. In a small voice, “Extremely strong...Ye Qingyu’s strength, when compared to the people of Azure phoenix academy, must not be any worse?”

These words woke countless people from their daze.

“That’s right, Ye Qingyu absolutely has the qualifications to compete with those arrogant and domineering Azure phoenix students!”

“Yes, yes! Ye Qingyu is a demon king with no scruples when he is enraged. He won’t be like those noble students, burdened by their reputation. Fearing they would lose, they hide and don’t fight!”

“If Ye Qingyu can really allow the White Deer academy to vent their anger, than from today onwards I will only follow him!”

“Standing in front of the stormy seas is the inherent character of a hero! This time, whoever stands up, is the hero!”

Chapter 051 – Azure Phoenix Academy, Is Merely This

Ye Qingyu was able to sense, that the atmosphere of the academy was slightly strange. An air of nervousness pervaded throughout the entire academy, as if the students were about to face a great opponent.

He returned to the dormitory to wash and change his clothes.

His original idea was to go and find Wen Wan and ask him several questions about cultivation. However, since Wen Wan had already left the academy, Ye Qingyu did not know what his next step would be.

He stayed in the dormitory to train in the nameless breathing technique for half the morning, then it was lunch.

After Ye Qingyu considered, he decided that he would first convert all the resources he had gained during the wilderness training into academic points. Then, he would think of a way to obtain a Spirit weapon. After entering the Spirit spring stage, he must find a spirit weapon and submerged it within the spring in his dantian for it to become truly his. Only by cultivating together with his weapon, could it be counted as the true path of the yuan qi formation way.

Of course, there was also the issue of skipping a year.

Ye Qingyu wrote down a list of what he needed to do, to order his thoughts.

Noon, the temperature could not be said as hot.

After Ye Qingyu had finished eating in the canteen, he went to the commerce area of the first year area to have a look. Within the weapon shops, there was Spirit weapons but the price was extremely high and the majority of it was low class weapons that did not match Ye Qingyu's needs.

The first life spirit weapon, for a martial artist of the Spirit spring stage, was extremely important. Ye Qingyu did not want to lower his standards.

He also attempted to add runes to the inexorable spear, to make it become a Spirit weapon. But after consulting several rune masters in the commerce area, he knew this was not possible.

The first reason was because the material of the inexorable spear was special, and it could not work well with runes and formations. And furthermore the spear was too large, even if a high class rune master was willing to do work upon it, it would expend a great deal of resources and attention on engraving rune on the spear. It was not worth it.

After walking around the commerce area entirely, Ye Qingyu eliminated the idea of turning the inexorable spear into a spirit weapon.

He understood, that although the power of the inexorable spear was great, but it could not become his long term weapon. He needed a weapon that grew strong along with him – the inexorable spear could no longer match his needs.

With many thoughts in his head, he followed the path. Unknowingly, he had already left the commerce area.

Trees cast mottled shadows, slanting towards the east.

The time was now afternoon.

Ye Qingyu went to the administration office, and exchanged all the resources he had obtained during the first practical battle training into academic points. After obtaining twenty academic points, he followed the path leading to the largest library in the first year area.

These days he had been training as if he was blindfolded. There were many slight problems and issues that had cropped up, that he hoped he would be able to find the answer to in the library.

But when he reached the entrance of the library, he found that the atmosphere there was slightly wrong.

Tens of first year students angrily stood below the platform, with people questioning loudly. And on the top of the platform there were several teenagers wearing a bright blue robe. From their outer appearance, these were not students of White Deer academy.

“This is the library of White Deer academy, why can’t we enter?”

“That’s right, the Azure Phoenix academy is too unreasonable. The

guest has become the host!”

“To think that you would monopolise the library and not allow us to enter, can you be anymore unreasonable?”

The students of White Deer academy were all filled with righteous indignation, their faces and neck flushed red. Evidently, they had been angered by something. There were also some with bruises in their faces, and traces of blood in their lips. They had obviously come to blows but came out the worse.

On the platform, the four students of the Azure phoenix academy, had an arrogant air, looking at the crowd gathered below with contemptuous disdain.

“Senior brother Xu Ge is here to consult some scriptures, that is akin to giving face to the entire White Deer academy. Don’t mistake our good intentions. A crowd of trash, chattering and buzzing. If you don’t have the strength to back up your actions, then scram!” An Azure Phoenix student with small eyes coldly sneered.

“You guys are too arrogant, this is in the end, White Deer academy’s territory.” The White Deer academy student with his eyes swollen like a rotten peach said angrily.

“And what about it? Before using this library, we had the permission of one of the elders of your academy.” An Azure phoenix student said with his chest out.

“Even if the elder agreed to you consulting the writings, but he did not allow you to block the entrance and not allow White Deer academy students to enter....” Another White Deer academy said furiously.

“Haha, what status is senior brother Xu Ge? He is right now quietly studying the books, and is not allowed to be disturbed. Naturally we cannot allow scraps with weak strength but does not recognise it to enter...” The Azure phoenix student with small eyes said haughtily.

“You...can you speak some reason?” A White Deer academy student said angrily.

“Reason? Haha, speak some reason?” The other Azure phoenix students as if they had heard the most funny joke in the world, all began laughing in contempt.

The small eyes Azure phoenix student shook his head, his eyes filled with pity as he looked at the White Deer academy students. With a mocking tone, he said: “A bunch of pitiful, idiotic, innocent trash. I don’t know what the White Deer academy teaches you...Remember, only parties with equal strength will discuss reason with each other. Your strength are too weak, have you ever seen a dragon speaking reason with an ant?”

The White Deer academy students were so infuriated that their bodies were quivering, but they did not know what to say.

The Azure Phoenix academy was located in one of the most wealthy districts of Snow country, with great power and unfathomable resources. In the rankings of the ten great academies of Snow country, it was

ranked so much higher than the White Deer academy. The vast majority of students in Azure phoenix academy came from famous families, all with great strength, and the average skill level was higher than the White Deer academy. This was a fact.

Originally, many White Deer academy students had an admiring and aspiring attitude towards the Azure Phoenix academy. After the Azure Phoenix academy had come, many wanted to use this as an opportunity to interact with the geniuses that came from the wealthy district of Snow country, and practice and exchange ideas with each other, each helping the other.

Who would have guessed that the high and mighty Azure phoenix students did not have the White Deer academy in their eyes at all. From their gazes, it was as if a high and mighty emperor was regarding a dirty beggar by the roadside. Filled with a bored disdain and contempt, an arrogance emanating from the marrow of their bones to their soul. Not to mention exchanging cultivation experiences, even speaking to a White Deer academy was a type of humiliation for them.

This kind of arrogant attitude cruelly pierced the hearts of the White Deer academy students.

In these days, there had already been several conflicts, both large and small, between the two academies. Only through the control of teachers from both side, could they barely manage to supresss any major fireworks. But the estrangement and enmity between them, had grown ever deeper.

Today the forceful monopolisation of the library, was only a small explosion from these countless conflicts.

In the previous spars, the students of White Deer academy evidently had always been on the losing side.

In the stand off, the White Deer academy students were both fuming and angry. But their skills were lesser than that of the Azure Phoenix students. There was nothing they could do.

And at this time, a White Deer academy student inadvertently looked behind. Suddenly his eyes brightened, his expression becoming excited again.

He grabbed the person beside him, pointing backwards.

“Why are you grabbing me, you...Eh? He is...Demon King Ye Qingyu?” His companion originally was annoyed, but the instant he turned back he also realised something, also becoming excited.

“Ye Qingyu has come.”

“He is coming to the library?”

“It should be. You have to know that the Demon King Ye is a famous madman who likes to spend time in the library.”

“Then does this mean...Hehe, Demon King Ye is famed for not sparing anyone under his spear...this time these people of the Azure Phoenix academy, is about to encounter misfortune!”

The White Deer academy students all looked towards Ye Qingyu walking closer to them. Suddenly there were all excited again, whispering to each other, as if they saw a life saving herb.

Someone wanted to greet Ye Qingyu, but they lifted their hands and did not say anything. One was because they were not familiar with Ye Qingyu, and the second was because there was a fearful respect.

Ye Qingyu had noticed everything.

He nodded his heads to the White Deer academy students. Not saying anything, he continued walking to the entrance of the library.

But this action of nodding his head, had already greatly astonished those students lifting their hands in greeting. At this moment, they unexpectedly realised, that the rumoured cold and emotionless demon king Ye, was not entirely a person who could not be reasoned with.

Step by step.

The expressions of several Azure phoenix students changed.

The aura that this silent White Deer student emitted, made them feel a trace of unease and pressure. One of them looked towards his companion, then faintly nodded his head. He rushed forward suddenly, his fist striking out.

The wind from the punch spread outwards.

“This road is blocked!” He shouted. His fist was as if it was a hammer, emitting an explosion of air, striking at the vital parts in Ye Qingyu’s chest.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything.

He did not even block.

His chest, under the gaze of numerous eyes, met with the fist that had the pressure of wind and lightning, striking together directly.◦

Kache !

The sounds of bone snapping could be heard.

Smiles appeared on the faces of the Azure phoenix students.

The White Deer academy students lost colour on all their faces.

But the next moment, Ye Qingyu took out another step. The Azure phoenix student who had struck out with his fist, cried out painfully. He fell away trembling, his right arm bending at a strange angle.

This type of situation, was as if a lance was stabbing into a copper wall and iron bastion, then it snapped off into four or five pieces...

So the thing that had broken was not Ye Qingyu's ribs.

It was the arm of the Azure Phoenix student.

"Audacious....."The Azure Phoenix student with small eyes who had not spoken yet, loudly shouted: "You dare injure someone, do you know who the person you have injured is..."

Before he had finished his sentence.

Ye Qingyu directly lifted his hand and punched out.

Boom !

The air seemed to explode with a swelling thunder.

The punch of the Azure Phoenix student could already be counted as extremely powerful. The winds caused by his punch, caused unending turbulence in the air, causing everyone to be astonished.

But as Ye Qingyu let out his punch, a thought suddenly gave birth in the hearts of many people: This punch is a true punch. The previous fist of the Azure Phoenix student, was almost as if he was a child playing around.

The three Azure Phoenix student, including the person with small eyes, in front of the just the wind from this punch, felt as if they were oats in a

hurricane. They were filled with insignificance and despair, quickly retreating, not daring to receive this punch at all.

Ye Qingyu laughed, stopping his fist.

The wind from the fist stopped.

“Azure phoenix academy, is merely this.”

He dragged out his words, unhurriedly entering the library step by step.

Staring at Ye Qingyu's figure till he disappeared, the four Azure Phoenix students suddenly felt the pressure as if a mountain was on top of them disappear. Cold sweat had completely soaked their backs...

If this White Deer academy student had not stopped his fist, they would have been heavily injured.

Chapter 052 – White Deer Without Talent Has Lost His Antlers, The Azure Phoenix Intends To Subdue The Heavens

This kind of strength, was too terrifying.

In such a tiny White Deer academy, there was such a monster?

From his appearance, his age was not high, only about thirteen or fourteen years old. He should be a first year student of White Deer academy...this was even more frightening.

If senior brother Xu Ge faced him, would he be able to win?

The four was completely silent. This was the first time they did not have absolute confidence in their talented senior brother.

At the same time, the White Deer academy students, also began cheering below the platform.

“Haha, we’ve finally vented our anger, this is too soothing!”

“Demon King Ye is really Demon King Ye. This is absolute dominance. Haha, he only stood there and let that person hit him. The result was that person’s fist and arm was shattered into pieces. Domineering, he is truly domineering!”

“How about it? Do you accept defeat? This is the strength of White Deer academy!”

“From now on, Demon King Ye is my idol!”

“That’s right, he is a true man. Hmph, Qin Wushuang is known as the number one person in first year, normally high and mighty. But since Azure Phoenix academy has arrived, I have never seen him do anything for us!”

The White Deer academy students cheered jubilantly.

They stood tall and pound, entering the library with their chests held out.

This time, the four people of Azure Phoenix academy, did not block them.

.....

Ye Qingyu entered the martial library.

He was already extremely familiar with this place, and knew where the information he needed regarding cultivation was situated. He headed directly for the third floor.

Just when Ye Qingyu stepped onto the third floor, a white clothed, black hair, handsome teenager passed by him.

The skin of this youth was like jade, possessed a clear and fair face, wealthy and had a spiritual air with slightly curled lips. He had an severity that did not come from anger, his entire aura like that of a deep pool, extremely profound. In his hands was a white fan, walking slowly down the stairs.

Ye Qingyu could not help but take a second glance.

He had never seen this teenager before. Judging from his clothing, he should be a student of the Azure Phoenix academy, of a similar age as him. But his strength was extremely powerful, definitely having long entered the Spirit Spring stage, much more powerful than the Qin Wushuang who he had fought previously...could he be the Xu Ge in the mouth of the Azure Phoenix academy?

At the time Ye Qingyu turned his head to have a second glance, the white cloth handsome teenager also turned back to look.

Their eyes met.

It was as if sparks had appeared in the air.

In the gaze of the white clothed teenager, there was a surprise and fighting will. But it only fleetingly passed by, and he controlled his emotions very well, turning and leaving.

Ye Qingyu was also slightly surprised.

At that moment, he was able to feel the inner yuan in his dantian trembling. It was as if it was directed by some kind of energy, nearly causing him to want to fight a battle.

The white clothed teenager left.

Ye Qingyu also turned away.

He continued to search for the information he needed, not spending much more attention on thinking about useless things.

The things that had happened just then, for him, was just a small bump in the road.

.....

.....

“Then from your words, Dianyi and the others have crossed blows with him?” The white clothed youth had his arms behind his back, unhurriedly walking in the stone tiles. His gaze flitted with no focus to the scenery around.

“Yes senior brother Xu.” The Azure Phoenix student with small eyes, Dianyi carefully followed behind, his attitude displaying utmost respect.

Of course the people who followed also included the other three Azure Phoenix students.

“Do you know the background of this White Deer academy student?” The white clothed teenager said blandly.

“I’ve asked, that person is called Ye Qingyu, he is only a poor commoner. But I’ve heard that his talent is exceptional, with herculean strength, and the way he does things is direct and without fear of the consequences. Hence, he has been called Demon King Ye by many students of the White Deer academy.”

Dianyi quickly answered.

In a short amount of time, he had already investigated most of the information about Ye Qingyu. This Dianyi, although his strength was not high, but he was extremely clever and devious. This was why the rising star of the first year Xu Ge, had allowed him to constantly accompany him.

“Demon King Ye?” The white clothed youth stopped walking, considering. A faint smile appeared on his lips. “Quite interesting, to be able to cause a reaction in my inner qi, he is quite strong...Hehe, who would have thought, that the White Deer academy ranked last in the ten great academies ranking in its twilight years and gradually dying, would be able to produce such an interesting seedling!”

“Senior brother Xu, about what had happened...” Dianyi carefully probed, wanting to say something.

Xu Ge lightly waved his hands. “I know what you want to say, but I advise you to eliminate that thought. That person is not something you

are able to provoke, and I currently don't want to oppose him...This time in our visit to White Deer academy, we have important things to do. Don't go aggravating everyone, otherwise if elder Chen passes down the blame, no one can withstand it."

Dianyi quickly nodded his head, not daring to say anything more.

Originally he did have some intentions, wanting to regain his face. But after hearing Xu Ge say that he did not want to oppose Demon King Ye, it seemed like this opponent was even more frightening than what he had imagined. He would temporarily eliminate his ideas of revenge.

In the coming days, he would have to restrain himself. This was their territory, after all. If he was to irritate some fierce people, the person who would lose out in the end would be him. Even if White Deer academy was generally weak, but to be able to produce one or two fierce people was still possible for them.

Xu Ge stood staring blankly at the fake mountain fountain far off in the distance, thinking of something, remaining silent for a while.

Dianyi and the others stood waiting quietly.

After ten minutes, he seemed to have thought something through.

He held his palm out slightly, the skin on his hands as white and jade. His inner yuan activated, a pale silver light appeared between his two palms and began gathering. From the original rough and coarse appearance till at the end smooth and sleek, the silver light brightly

radiating. It was as the moon was burning between his palms.

Dianyi seeing this site, his heart was shocked, greatly astonished.

“Congratulations senior brother Xu Ge. You have finally managed to master the [Full moon seal]. From now on, in the second year and under of Azure Phoenix academy, you no longer have any opponents.” Dianyi quickly rushed to congratulate him.

He knew, Dian Yi had only studied the yuan qi battle technique, [Full moon seal] for half a year. He had previously never been able to fully understand it, who would have thought that coming to White Deer academy, he would suddenly master and grasp it.

“It is only a small success, haha.” Xu Ge could hardly hide his excitement.

He could not help but be excited.

In the [Choosing techniques ceremony] half a year ago in Azure Phoenix academy, standing his ground against the opinion of many, chose the [Full moon seal], a technique that was extremely powerful but also extremely hard to cultivate in. In reality this was taking a great risk; if he managed to master it, he would completely dominate his peers but if he failed, his competitors would leave him far far behind.

Xu Ge's original plan, relying on his talent and cultivation resources, estimated that mastering the [Full moon seal] would not be a problem. Who would have known, that he would train for half a year without

completely understanding it, nearing the edges of failure.

If not for the advice of an adept, telling him to use this opportunity of Azure Phoenix academy visiting White Deer academy, to come to White deer academy to find training notes he would still be stuck. This solved many problems associated with the bottleneck, otherwise he feared he would still be drifting between the limits of failure.

“It’s only that the [Full moon seal] is evidently an extremely deep and profound technique. Even Azure Phoenix academy does not have any cultivation writings about this skill, why does such a small White Deer academy, in the public library, would have a clue?

Xu Ge’s heart was filled with questions, and in the end he could not think it through.

But the training notes, was really incomparably insightful. He only read it once, and erased the doubts and fears in his heart, breaking through at once. Xu Ge lowered his head to look at the two moon seals between his palms, in a very good mood.

.....

The next couple of days, the wind and waves was peaceful.

The little loli Song Xiaojun did not appear again nor did the noble organisation seek to have trouble with Ye Qingyu. Apart from training, Ye Qingyu also spent some time in the library searching on information about the cultivation resources he would need.

Wen Wan had already left, and Ye Qingyu did not have another teacher he was close to. After the incident in the challenging matches, many teachers that had come from noble families, did not have that good of an impression of Ye Qingyu. They were not too willing to pay attention to him. Even if Ye Qingyu humbly asked them, they would be indifferent.

Under a fit of rage, Ye Qingyu decided he would not ask the teachers in the academy anymore and searched for the answers to his questions within the books of the public library.

Thankfully, he had the pass that head teacher Wang Yan had previously given him. Not only could Ye Qingyu enter and leave as he pleased in the library of the first years, he could also go to the public library located in the second year area to search for the information he needed.

His memory was shocking and comprehension was monstrous. His perception was extremely abnormal. With the aid of the nameless breathing technique, there were many martial techniques that he only needed to consult the martial manuals without the need for a teacher. His progress was extremely rapid.

Ye Qingyu also preferred this method of training. This way, he would not spend his energy which was not much in the first place, to be diverted in the fights and conflict between the groups of the academy.

In the blink of the eye, ten days had passed.

This day, in the morning it was sunny.

After Ye Qingyu's morning lesson was over, and switching to a clean martial uniform, carrying his spear holster, he headed to wards the administration area of the first year. He wanted to apply for skipping a year, directly entering the second year.

The things that he needed to learn in first year, had already been learnt entirely.

After entering second year, apart from training the inner yuan by yourself, the students could also begin to approach rune formations and rune weapons these two supernatural abilities. Even though these were supporting skills, but it was also an important part of a martial artists's strength.

It was also something that Ye Qingyu had planned to learn.

On the road there, he encountered many White Deer academy students. Seeing Ye Qingyu, they quickly lowered their heads and rushed past. There were also some people who would meekly greet Ye Qingyu, with some commoner students gathering together as if wanting to say something, but in the end did not approach...

Within the entire first year, Ye Qingyu was definitely the most special.

In the eyes of many students, his existence was akin to that of a Demon King.

The main path of the stone tiles diverged into many smaller paths. The

path towards the administration area, coincidentally also passed through the practice grounds.

Ye Qingyu turned his head to have a look.

In the previous battle, Ye Qingyu had lifted the ring with his spear. Crushed rocks filled the air, and the grounds around was completely transformed to a ruin. But the efficiency of White Deer academy in reconstruction was extremely high. Today, this place had already regained its former appearance. Spacious grounds, tall and high rings, neat and tidy.

But on the practice grounds, many figures were gathered.

On the number one arena, two banners, white and green was hung on opposite sides. Under the wind of the morning it fluttered, with each flag having two lines of word written in red ink. These characters were like swords or axes, filled with killing intent.

“White Deer without talent has lost his antlers, the Azure Phoenix intends to subdue the Heavens!”

Chapter 053 – The Ye Mansion

As he neared, Ye Qingyu could clearly see the writings on the banner.

A thought passed through his mind.

During his time at the Grievance hall, he had heard about this from the little loli. The Azure Phoenix students had set up sparring arenas throughout the first, second, third and fourth year areas respectively. They had defeated many strong opponents of White Deer academy, becoming more and more arrogant as time went on. Ye Qingyu did not think that it had progressed to such an extent.

These two banners, were erected by the Azure Phoenix academy.

Just from looking at this phrase, one was able to know the extent of how conceited the people at Azure Phoenix academy were. Placing such a banner within the practice grounds of White Deer academy was not only a provocation; it was a fierce slap in the face.

But since the banner was able to be erected for such a long time without it being taken down, very evidently no one was able to stand up within White Deer academy and defeat the students of Azure Phoenix academy.

The ring was surrounded by a considerable number of White Deer academy students. Their expressions were all filled with fury, but not one of them entered to challenge.

Some people saw that Ye Qingyu had appeared, instantly cheering.

A large number of students of White Deer academy remembered the incident that had happened in front of the entrance of the library a few days ago. In an instant, their hearts filled with expectation. If Demon King Ye was willing to act, then these two humiliating banners on the ring, could definitely be trashed!

But very quickly, they were disappointed.

Because Demon King Ye was only passing by. He only had a glance from far away, then walked away uninterestedly. There was not the slightest indication that he would act out in the sparring arena, his figure quickly disappearing into the trees far off...

“He left just like that?”

“Could it be that even Demon King Ye is afraid?”

“This is too disappointing.”

“Disappointing your fart. Demon King Ye not acting out is extremely normal. Haha, the so called number one person of the first years, Qin Wushuang why does he not act? He is usually famous and showered with compliments, but he does not act in key moments. That is what is truly hateful!”

“That’s right!”

“Hehe, these noble students, normally would slander and vilify Demon King Ye in a hundred ways. Now that they need his strength, this kind of countenance is really unsightly...”

Within the crowd, another topic of discussion was argued back and forth.

.....

Administration area。

Applying for skipping a year was much more simpler than Ye Qingyu had imagined.

Originally he had thought there would be a lengthy application process and strength determination testing. Who would have thought the entire process would be so simple? After filling in a simple a simple form, the sleepy white haired head of administration only casually glanced at ye Qingyu. With a flick of her brush, she accepted the application.

“From tomorrow onwards, you can go to the second year area for training. You don’t have to worry about the things that will occur afterwards, everything will be handled for you.”

The white haired head of administration took Ye Qingyu’s nameplate back. A light in her palm flashed, the information in the nameplate being changed and rewritten. Throwing it back, she waved her hand, kicking Ye

Qingyu out.

Demon King Ye was slightly confused as he walked out of the administration area.

This was a little too smooth.

Could it be that the people in the administration area, had long known that he would come here to apply to jump a year, so they had already prepared beforehand?

Ye Qingyu guessed in his heart.

He did not know, that from the beginning of the academy to the present day, they had already developed a very complete system in these decades. In the past years, every year there would be a genius that had a cultivation speed far outstripping their peers, so jumping a year was not such a rare incident.

The white haired administration head had strength that was unfathomable. Just through one glance, she was able to discern a student's cultivation, and as long as their cultivation was at the required level, skipping a year was an easy thing to do.

Ye Qingyu examined the new name plate in his hands. After a moment of observation, a triumph spread throughout his heart.

“Jumping a year is successful, from now on I can enter and leave as I please from White Deer academy.”

After some consideration, he did not return to the dormitory. Instead, he headed straight for the entrance of the White Deer academy. He had already been in the academy for five months straight; truly, he was impatient to take a wander out in Deer city.

In truth, Demon King Ye was a young man that liked action and liveliness from the depths of his bones.

.....

Two hours later.

Ye Qingyu appeared in front of his parents' graves.

Although only five months had passed, but the grave was already overgrown with wild weeds, somewhat in a decline. The graves were completely covered with grass, and after several torrential rainstorms, the graveyard was scoured thoroughly, the gravestones at a slant and nearly falling...

Ye Qingyu respectfully kneeled and bowed in front of the grave, then began the process of tidying it.

After spending a hour of time, the graveyard was once again returned to its clean and tidy state.

Ye Qingyu sat in front of the grave and took out a piece of paper from

his chest.

On it, was a dense list of things he needed to do.

His gaze landed on the first row of characters.

“To revive the Ye family, first I must take back the Ye ancestral home, and return the memorial tablets of my mother and father to their place...”

Ye Qingyu clenched his fists.

This day, had finally arrived.

.....

Deer city.

North district.

With less than five kilometres from the poor district, there was an area for the wealthy and the nobles. Stately mansions were located in this area, with fresh and clean air, tree lined streets, spacious and tidy, birds chirping, butterfly fluttering. A beautiful scenery.

This was the wealthy district of the Northern part of the city.

In the north west of the wealthy district, there was a mansion that

could not be counted as extremely large. It covered a radius of less than a hundred acres, but the terrain was relatively elevated. There were streams passing through the mansion, with a large and expansive courtyard. Pavilions and porches scattered throughout, with an intricate architecture. There was a faint sense that it was tightly guarded, something contrary to its peaceful appearance.

The entrance of the mansion was from the south.

On the bright red board, the two dazzling words, 'Ding Family' was written.

The mahogany doors was six feet wide, and there was two sculptures made of white marble, three feet tall Bixie* guarding the two sides of the door.

Ding Kaixuan was the current owner of this mansion.

To speak of the history of this mansion, Ding Kaixuan could not help but to feel triumphant.

He had a noble title, but within Deer city, he could only be counted as a third class noble. When compared to the true nobles of the various forces of Deer city, he was by far lacking.

However Ding Kaixuan had always been adept at looking out for his own personal gain.

This mansion, originally belonged to the Ye family. The husband and

wife of the Ye family had died in the battle to safeguard the city, and only left an ignorant son. Ding Kaixuan saw his opportunity, and used some underhanded methods, nearly without expending any financial resources, and through extortion managed to obtain this mansion.

And the servants and maids that originally belonged to the Ye family, also became the resources of the Ding family.

In these years, Ding Kaixuan had grown accustomed to this mansion, finding the lifestyle here extremely comfortable. He decided that he might as well move from his original mansion; as a result he was often present here.

The things that happened till here, seemed to occur very smoothly.

But every since approximately five months ago, the only son of the Ye family, Ye Qingyu, suddenly became White Deer academy student with exceptional talent from the original idiotic retard that he was. Ding Kaixuan could not rest easy from then on.

He began to worry, if Ye Qingyu came back fully fledged and looking for trouble, and the things in the past came to light, then there would be issues.

Therefore since then, Ding Kaixuan began to plan, and make some preparations.

He expended a large amount of money to hire an expert to protect the mansion.

Ever since the morning, Ding Kaixuan had always felt his right eyebrow twitching. He was restless and agitated, as if something bad was about to happen. His mood was extremely poor.

During lunch, something finally happened.

A servant when placing the utensils on the table, accidentally dropped an silver chopstick on the ground. The silver chopstick fell to ground with a ding, attracting the attention of everyone.

The agitated Ding Kaixuan was instantly enraged, ordering the woman to be hung up and beaten without any other explanation.

“Hmph, servant scum, daring to neglect me! I see you don’t want to live...” Ding Kaixuan roared.

His unfounded anger, was all vented on this woman.

At this time, Ding Kaixuan could already recognise this forty year old woman, was namely a servant from the previous Ye family. And she should be one of the nurses of the only son of the Ye family, Ye Qingyu.

This made him inexplicably angrier.

Whip after whip was struck. The pitiful woman clothes were torn apart, fainting with pain.

“Pretending to be dead? Hmph, continue to beat her, if you beat her to death than find a place to bury her.” Ding Kaixuan’s anger was still burning, shouting in a loud voice.

Within the courtyard, the servants were all gathered together, not daring to plead for mercy.

“Don’t, don’t! Master, I beg you, my mother did not do it intentionally, please spare my mother!” A young girl rushed out, desperately protecting the woman with her own body, begging bitterly.

The little girl seemed to be only thirteen or fourteen years of age, with features that could be called delicate and pretty. Although she wore the rough clothes of a servant girl, her appearance was somewhat striking. Currently, her tears were like rain, tightly hugging the unconscious woman and convulsing with fear as if she was a skylark scared and shivering in cold during a rainstorm.

She was the daughter of the woman, her name was Little Grass.

Seeing her mother be beaten to such a state without any reason, Little Grass had long been frightened out of her wits. She was only a pitiful little child, how could she be able to protect her mother in front of the ruthless and savage whips of the guards. Very quickly, she had endured several whips, her body stained with blood.

“Little lowly servant you dare block? Hmph, your guts is not small to not even care about my words. Come, drag her to one side, I’ll let this little lowly servant see with her own eyes her mother being beaten to death. To make me Ding Kaixuan unhappy, what the consequences of

that are...”

Ding Kaixuan roared a like a mad dog, still with a unknown anger.

At this time, the pitiful woman, under the intense pain, finally awoke.

She desperately pushed her daughter away.

“Little grass, don’t pay attention to mother...You...must ...live on...One day...your brother Ye will come back...” The woman was covered with blood, forcefully opening her eyes, and letting out a few weak and feeble words.

“No mother. I need you to live. If you are not here, what will I do?” Little grass began shedding tears of horror.

Her father had died in the battle to defend the city four years ago, and in these years, she and her mother relied on each other for survival. Every day was tough and arduous, but in the end they could support each other. The little girl could not imagine, if she lost her mother, in this cruel and cold world, the she without any relatives, how could she survive.

“What are you doing standing there? Beat her, cruelly beat her...” Ding Kaixuan as if he had gone mad shrieked.

Chapter 054 – Why Are You Still Here?

The guards once again lifted their whips maliciously.

At this time, suddenly another guard came rushing in. He came in front of Ding Kaixuan, clasping his hands together. He said: “Master, outside the entrance a youth is asking to see you...”

“Youth? What youth?” Ding Kaixuan impatiently waved his hand. “Tell him to scram, your master I doesn’t have the mood to see some assorted trash.”

The guard hesitated for a moment. “Master, this youth is a student of White Deer academy.”

The students of White Deer academy were all martial artists. In Deer city, they had a certain status and respect given to them.

“White Deer academy?” Ding Kaixuan was slightly taken aback, then instantly quivered, realising something. “How old is he...did you ask what his name is?”

“He seems to be around fourteen years old. This subordinate have asked, he said his family name is Ye, and his name is Qingyu.” The guard nodded his head.

He was not able to see that once he finished his words, Ding Kaixuan’s facial expression changing entirely. Fury and fear flashed across his eyes,

his expression undergoing a myriad of changes, and finally looking gloomy.

Ding Kaixuan did not think, that the thing that would come, would come so fast.

It was not that he had never thought about the possibility of the descendant from the Ye family would come. But he had never imagined the day would come so quickly; Ye Qingyu had not even been in the White Deer academy for five months. According to normal reasoning, only after a year could he enter the second year and be free to leave the White Deer academy...

In these days, Ding Kaixuan had sent people to gather information about Ye Qingyu's performance within White Deer academy. He was able to obtain some vague news such as Ye Qingyu offending Qin Wushuang and being confined with the Grievance hall. Only through hearing that could his heart settle down...

Putting all these information together, Ding Kaixuan judged that the descendant of the Ye family, in the near future, absolutely could not pose any sort of threat to him.

But the problem was, why had the day arrived so early?

In this moment, countless thoughts passed through Ding Kaixuan's mind.

He was about to say something, when he suddenly saw a teenager

wearing a long black robe. As if taking a stroll, he came step by step closer. Stepping into the inner courtyard, and heading towards the main hall...

This teenager did not look to be over fourteen or fifteen years old with a muscular body. His thick black hair was tied back with a white hair band, hanging loose to the waist. He had swordlike eyebrows and a star like gaze with an angular face. Especially his pair of eyes, was like a cold star in the dark night, as if it flashing with an electric light.

Behind him, he carried a black spear holster with a spear the thickness of a young child's arm that was able to be seen behind his back. The two spears were around one metres and eight centimetres, and the black body of the spear had a heavy sinister killing aura emitting from it.

The youth walked closer step by step, his gaze glancing at the architecture all around. He displayed a type of lament, thinking of the past and sighing. He completely disregarded the other people in the main hall...

“Where did such a wild kid come from, to dare to barge into the Ding mansion...” After being surprised for a moment, a guard immediately rushed out shouting.

The black robed youth swung his arm.

Xiu!

This guard who was at the peak of the fifth stage of the ordinary

martial level, flew out like a kite. He landed on the ground, struggling for a long time but still not managing to get up.

Everyone was greatly stunned.

“You...you are Ye Qingyu?” Ding Kaixuan did not need to ask, he immediately knew the name of this teenager

The black robed teenager lifted his head and gave him a glance, his gaze filled with a strange dissatisfaction. Instead of answering the question, he asked instead, “Why are you still here?”

Ding Kaixuan hesitated.

What did these words mean?

Why can I not be here?

He suppressed the anger in his heart, and gave a discreet signal to the guards next to him. Then a seemingly amiable smile appeared on his face. He said: “I wonder why the young master of the Ye family has come here to my place, do you have some business?”

“Your place ? ”Ye Qingyu gave a mocking smile: “This is the Ye family, why can I not come?”

Ding Kaixuan’s expression changed, his face darkening. “Little children are young and are naïve so I won’t blame you. This place that used to be

Ye family now is the Ding mansion. You trespassed on the Ding mansion without reason, this is violating the laws of the Snow country. In consideration of your young age, I won't take matters further. Quickly leave!"

Coordinating with Ding Kaixuan's strict and threatening tone, tens of guards pulled out their blades. They pressed closer from all sides, emitting a killing aura, their faces sinister.

Ye Qingyu gave a light smile, lifting his head and looking at Ding Kaixuan. He said bitinglly, "I don't want the blood of outsiders to pollute the ancestral home of the Ye family. I'll give you thirty minutes of time, obediently scram, or else..."

Before he had finished speaking.

An abundant and irresistible yuan qi energy exploded from around Ye Qingyu. The tens of guards around him, amidst their screams, was forced stuttering backwards by this energy, not being able to stay in balance.

Ding Kaixuan with wide eyes retreated several steps, his face changing completely.

"Lei Gongfong, are you still not going to act?" He cried darkly.

As he finished his sentence, a bear like man with a body like an iron tower walked out from the shadows.

This person was around thirty years of age and two metres tall, with

bulging muscles that was similar to that of a massive bear. It was unknown how he was able to hide in the shadows; previously no one had discovered him, as if he did not exist at all...

But when he stood out, the ferocious aura emitted from his enormous body was enough to make people feel as if a ten thousand pound boulder was pressing against their chest. There was an illusion of suffocation, as if dark clouds were pressing down.

“Keke, a little child knowing some superficial skills, dares to come out and flaunt?” The Lei Gongfong with a steel body, laughed like an owl. “White Deer academy has really declined, its getting worse with each generation!”

Ding Kaixuan’s face, also displayed a malevolent intention.

This Lei Gongfong was someone that he had spent much financial resources into hiring, a Spirit spring expert. He was infamous throughout, cruel and ruthless. Normally there was not much use for him, but today with Lei Gongfong here, he could definitely take care of the descendant of the Ye family.

Opposite.

Ye Qingyu only took a glance at Lei Gongfong, then lost his interest.

He suddenly sniffed, smelling a bloody odour. Realising something, his gaze passed by the crowds, finally landing on the pitiful woman hanging from mid air far off in the distance outside the main hall.

“This is...” Ye Qingyu’s heart shook, recognising the woman covered in blood. “It’s aunt Lan!”

Xiu !

Everyone felt a blur zip across their vision.

The Ye Qingyu who was originally within the main hall, through a flicker of his shadow, disappeared. The next instant, he appeared outside the main hall.

Che!

The ropes were sliced apart by the wind from his palm.

Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, catching the woman into his embrace. His left hand extended and an invisible yuan qi shot out, grabbing hold of a chair covered with beast fur, and placing the woman onto the chair.

“Mother, mother...” Little grass quickly rushed over, to protect her mother.

The woman woke up from her unconsciousness again and felt a pain as if her body was being stabbed. In her sight, there was a young and handsome face, faintly familiar. Enduring her pain, she said, “Child, you....you are...”

“Aunt Lan, it’s me. I’m little Yu. Aunt Lan, I’m sorry, I’ve come late...”
Ye Qingyu was greatly shaken within his heart.

The woman’s name was Qin Lan, and was one of the nurses of Ye Qingyu. It was said that Ye Qingyu’s real mother did not possess any milk when Ye Qingyu was small, and it was this nurse that had raised Ye Qingyu with her milk. Qin Lan’s husband was a guard of the Ye family, and in the battle of the city, died along with Ye Qingyu’s parents.

After the Ye family’s property and mansion was forcefully taken, Qin Lan and her daughter little grass was both seized as servants and Ye Qingyu was forced to live on the streets, with no way to resist. Although Ye Qingyu was still young at that time, but from the last words of his father, he could vaguely guess at some of the hidden meanings within. In order not to involve or implicate Qin Lan and her daughter, in these four years, he had not contacted them at all.

Until he had entered White Deer academy and possessed sufficient strength, was his first action be to rush to recover the Ye family home. One reason was solely for the sake of retaking the mansion but at the same time, he wanted to see Qin Lan and her daughter again and free the servants that had been seized by the Ding family...

Who would have thought, the first scene that he would see when he returned would be this.

An anger, began burning from Ye Qingyu’s innards!

“Little trash, I’m speaking to you, you dare ignore me...” Lei Gongfong also exited the main hall with large steps. His face was slightly hard to

look at; he had not been able to stop Ye Qingyu's actions, causing him to lose face.

"Little Yu..Quickly go..You..." Qin Lan understood what had just happened, hurriedly pushing Ye Qingyu away. From her perspective, a fourteen year old teenager was definitely not the opponent of such a fierce and bloodthirsty Lei Gongfong.

"Brother Little Yu, quickly go, don't worry about us..." An unknown courage came from Little Grass, she was still a child but was determined.

"Sister Little Grass..." Ye Qingyu looked at the little girl who had grown up with him drinking the same milk. He could not help but feel sorrow in his heart when he saw the state she was in.

In these four years, Ye Qingyu had felt that he himself had lived an extremely hard life. He had always endured, withstanding the mocking and disdain of the entire city, becoming the clown of Deer city. He was always withstanding the burden of humiliation but compared to these two, the suffering he had undergone was nothing. Qin Lan and Little Grass, was truly living in hell, experiencing all sorts of suffering and misery!

He had really came too late!

Ye Qingyu blamed himself for their suffering.

Opposite.

On the face of Lei Gongfong was a cruel and sinister smile. “Go? It’s too late...Lowly trash, to dare come to us alone, is looking for death. Master Ding, I advise you to get rid of this little fellow entirely, eliminating any future problems.”

“This...” Ding Kaixuan was tempted but he was also undecided.

To kill a student of White Deer academy, one must bear a certain amount of risk. He was only a third class noble, and must carefully consider this proposal.

“Haha, Master Ding, what are you scared of? The gutter of the North District is filled with corpses. After chopping him up and throwing him in there, who can discover him?” Lei Gongfong laughed malevolently, extremely bloodthirsty. “I, Lei Gongfong, have killed the demonic beasts before with my own hands and killed people of the military. Hehe, to kill a little trash of White Deer academy, what is there to be scared about?”

“If this is made known?” Ding Kaixuan was still hesitant.

“Hmph, who dares leak this, I’ll kill that person.” The killing of Lei Gongfong leaked out. As if he was a giant bear that had gone rabid, he took a step, shaking the entire structure of the mansion.

The servants of the Ding family, their faces were scared white and was shivering in terror.

Chapter 055 – This All Belongs To The Ye Family

“Quickly go, Little Yu, you...” Qin Lan was in a panic, struggling to sit up. The wounds on her body broke open again, fresh blood spilling everywhere.

Ye Qingyu quickly placed his palm on the back of Qin Lan, sending a stream of inner qi. Only through doing this was he able to stabilise her injuries.

He turned and looked outside, his gaze landing on a decorative mountain. Inexplicably, he asked, “Aunt Lan, from what I remember, this courtyard did not have a decorative mountain in it?”

Qin Lan did not understand the meaning behind his words. After a slight hesitation, she subconsciously answered: “It’s part of the new design of the Ding family...”

“Hehe, so it was really this...then it should be demolished.” Ye Qingyu laughed. “Aunt Lan, wait a moment.”

Saying this, he stood up.

“Do you know why I have to demolish this mountain?” Ye Qingyu said seriously.

“Little trash, stop pretending and doing your schemes, you don’t know you’re about to die!” Lei Gongfeng walked step by step closer, laughing

maliciously. “Quickly beg me...haha, begging is no use, I’ll cut you into pieces!”

Ye Qingyu at this time, slightly shook his head, as if he had only noticed this fighter of the Ding family that was filled with killing intent at this moment.

He nodded his head thoughtfully. “En, theres a solution.”

Before he had finished.

Ye Qingyu suddenly took a step forward.

Lei Gongfong was still walking forward when he abruptly felt a blur before his eyes and a hand was already heading towards him. Under his shock, the inner yuan of Lei Gongfong began to be activated, shoving both his hands forwards, wanting to knock the palm away...

Who would have guessed that his two hands which was tough enough to crack apart stone, when it met this palm, it did not knock the palm back. Instead his steel hands that he was so proud of, instantly fractured, the pain spreading throughout his body...

“Aaaaaa...” Liu Gongfong opened his mouth, letting out an explosive scream as if wanting to say something.

But the next moment, this palm had already firmly gripped his throat. Then Liu Gong felt his entire vision falling backwards, fierce winds blowing into both of his ears.

Everyone had their eyes wide open.

Including Ding Kaixuan.

This noble master who thought he had everything under control, at this time could not help but let out a breath of exclamation. He watched stunned as the biggest card under his sleeve, watched as the Liu Gongfeng with unfathomable strength, as if he was the same as a dog, as if he was the same as a lousy sack, be casually grabbed around the neck by Ye Qingyu.

“Aaaaaaaa.....” Lei Gongfond screeched crazily and struggled for his life. But this palm, was as if it was made from steel, incomparably firm, gripping his neck so tightly it was impossible to break away.

Liu Gong was shocked as he discovered his one Spirit spring stage, was entirely suppressed by the inner yuan within this palm. The inner yuan in his body was expelled from his four limbs, firmly locked within his dantian, as if he was sealed.

“Beg from you?”

Ye Qingyu’s gaze was like a sword that pierced through Liu Gongfong. He had a bland smile that was filled with mockery and disdain.

“You...hehe...little thing....quickly release me...you...” Liu Gongfong’s face was filled with a ferocity, still trying to threaten Ye Qingyu.

“Wait a moment, after I’m finished using you then I’ll release you.”

Ye Qingyu smiled.

His body floated one metre up in the air, lifting up Lei Gongfong’s massive body, slowly arriving in front of the decorative mountain. Without even saying one word, he lifted up Lei Gongfong as if lifting up a battering ram, smashing it down on the boulder!

Boom !

There was a tremor like an earthquake.

The fake mountain started shattering, dust rising everywhere.

“Aaaa....” Liu Gongfong cried painfully, but the next instant was like a mother hen being grabbed in the neck, not able to emit any more sounds.

Boom!Boom!Boom!

Ye Qingyu mercilessly continued to hammer away.

The decorative mountain collapsed, large chunks upon large chunks of rocks falling to the ground. Like an earthquake was occurring, the entire courtyard seemed to be trembling.

The servants and guards of the Ding family all had deathly white faces.

Blood spurted everywhere.

From the start, Lei Gongfong's body was relatively unharmed, then his flesh began tearing apart. Even though he was at the peak of body refinement and also had the protection of inner yuan, it still could not bear this level of impact for long.

The force of Ye Qingyu's strikes had contained at least ten thousand pounds in every strike.

Ding Kaixuan had long lost all the colour on his face, pointing his finger at Ye Qingyu. His hand was shivering like he was suffering epilepsy, but he could not even manage to utter a word out, as if he was driven crazy with fear!

Finally, the entire rockery collapsed.

Ye Qingyu stopped, looking at the rubble of the destroyed mountain, displaying a hint of satisfaction. He casually tossed Lei Gongfong's body that was now limp into the spreading dust.

The next instant, without that steel hand clutching his throat, the cry of Lei Gongfong was like that of a pig being slaughtered, resounding throughout.

But this howl, made the entire courtyard seem even more quiet.

The other people were all dumbfounded.

Ding Kaixuan had nearly lost his ability to think, subconsciously withdrawing his pointing fingers, not daring to point at Ye Qingyu anymore.

Ye Qingyu's figure flashed, appearing in front of the entrance to the hall, raising his hand gently.

A strong gust of wind passed by, sweeping away the rubble and dust in the air. In the clear sight of everyone, was the fake mountain shattered till it was a pile of rocks, and Lei Gongfong covered with blood. His four limbs was fractured into who know how many pieces, lying there in the rocks like a dead dog, crying painfully...

This instant, many people finally understood through their cold sweat.

So this was the method that Ye Qingyu used to destroy the fake mountain.

Too terrifying!

Too violent!

Ye Qingyu stood silently in front of the entrance to the hall.

The wind lightly blew his black robe, and his thick black hair began moving like a flame.

A deathly silent was all around.

“I hate the people being pretentious in front of me. And besides, you can’t beat me at being pretentious. Haha, when I was fourteen, I was alone in the wild and killed over a thousand demonic beasts, including high class demonic beasts that were bitten to death by me. Also, situations involving killings, I have also seen many. You’re the type that appears fierce but is cowardly at heart, you’ve only torn apart a couple of demonic beasts, how is that worth bragging about? Half a step in the Spirit spring, inner yuan like a dry stream. Haha, a trash like you, because of your ignorance you are meaningless. You don’t even understand what the White Deer academy represents, and you also don’t know how the struggles between nobles actually are. You’re stupid and Ding Kaixuan is even stupider, that’s why you were able to fool him to pay such a high price for you...”

Ye Qingyu looked at Lei Gongfong, his face filled with contempt.

“Mercy...Mercy...” Lei Gongfong’s mouth was filled with blood. Without any trace of his previous arrogance, as if he was a dog with a broken spine, struggling to beg for mercy.

At this moment, even if Lei Gongfong was even more stupid, he absolutely knew he was not the opponent of this teenager. He was already scared out of his wits.

Originally with his strength, even if he was repeatedly struck onto the fake mountain, he would not be in such a pitiful state. But the teenager at that instant, had sealed his inner yuan, not allowing him to use yuan

qi to protect his body...

This type of strength, exceeded Lei Gongfong by many times over.

“I won’t kill you, scram.” Ye Qingyu flicked his hands.

Lei Gongfong was as if he was granted amnesty. He struggled to rise, not daring to tarry in the slightest. Bearing his pain, he bit by bit crawled away...

Ding Kaixuan was like an icicle.

“Noble master, you’re still not leaving? Staying here, do you want me to invite you to dinner?” Ye Qingyu asked with a smile that was not a smile.

Ding Kaixuan did not dare say anything.

He knew he should quickly leave.

But the problem was in these four years, he had invested a lot into this mansion. There were many treasured objects that had been transferred here for storage, once he left, everything would belong to the Ye family..

Thinking of this, he could only feel a pain in his teeth and flesh.

People die because of riches, birds die because of food.

Therefore he hesitated, wanting to rely on his noble status, to negotiate.

Ye Qingyu could see through the thoughts of Ding Kaixuan with one glance, not paying attention to him anymore.

“Go find a doctor, to treat the injuries of Aunt Lan.” Ye Qingyu supported Qin Lan till she was seated properly, then activated his inner yuan, suppressing her pain.

There was a manservant nearby, who was fair faced, and seemed clever. Hearing this, after a slight hesitation, he immediately ran to find a doctor.

Ye Qingyu comforted Qin Lan and her daughter then turned, coming to the centre of the hall.

In the deepest part of the hall, there was a landscape painting hung on the wall. Directly underneath, there was a small, bronze altar with intricate workmanship, with carvings of flowers and birds and also depicting scenes of the human race fighting. It was a work of art.

This small bronze altar was once one of the treasured possessions of the Ye family.

Ye Qingyu looked at this little altar, his deepest memories being invoked. He remembered the intimate and gentle moments with his mother and father, a faint smile appearing unknowingly on his face.

He retrieved the brass heroic badge from the inter dimensional pouch, placing it on the recess on top of the altar.

Instantly, a sound of mechanisms turning could be heard.

The four walls of the hall suddenly glowed with a pale light from the runes and formations. The entire mansion seemed to possess a strange atmosphere, indistinct lights from runes shining on all parts of the mansion. Stone tiles, walls, water pavilions, corridors, the surface of every part of this building began to glow.

But very quickly, everything became peaceful again.

At this time, the Ye family mansion was as if it was changed and as if nothing had happened whatsoever.

Ding Kaixuan seeing this, his entire body was shaken.

His gaze was filled with regret and remorse. “So the deed for this house, was in your hands all along...”

In a world where runes where advanced, mansions that were above average had deeds made by rune masters. Transactions exchanging houses, needed the rune hub to reset the owner. Only after this, could you be counted as a true owner, and received the protection of the royal law of Snow country.

After Ding Kaixuan had forcefully repossessed the ancestral house of the Ye family, he had never managed to find the deed. After hiring a

person who had some skills in runes, he had managed to change the information in the runes slightly. Normal people could not tell, making it seem as if he really possessed the deed.

Now that Ye Qingyu had managed to bring out the true deed, the rune hub – that is the little bronze altar, had reset. This was equal to Ye Qingyu once again becoming the owner of this mansion.

Ding Kaixuan finally understood, that all his plans and schemes, in a split second had become wasted effort.

His heart, turned icy cold.

“I...I need...I need to take back what belongs to me.” Ding Kaixuan said hoarsely, speaking as if he was talking to himself. “I have many things in this mansion, I...”

Ye Qingyu gave him a smile. “From today onwards, everything here, belongs to the Ye family.”

Chapter 056 – The Corners Of Her Mouth Curved Slightly Upwards

“But.....”Ding Kaixuan was in a panic.

“If you don’t leave then I’ll personally invite you to go out.”Ye Qingyu looked at the heroic brass badge in his hands, examining it carefully. “You have a position of nobility, but to trespass on a property of someone with this heroic badge is a grave crime. I absolutely have the right to arrest you!”

Ding Kaixuan was dumbfounded.

Only half a moment later, did he wake up from his nightmare. Biting his teeth, glaring steadily at Ye Qingyu he left his parting words. “The person surnamed Ye, you win. We’ll wait and see.” He turned and left.

Ye Qingyu lightly smiled.

“This time I will let you go. But my patience has its limits, the next time you try and act against my friends and family, if you even display the slightest intention, then I will make you disappear completely from this world. If you don’t believe me, then try it!”

The words of Ye Qingyu, reverberated throughout the entire courtyard.

Ding Kaixuan stopped his steps, his face dark, finally leaving without

turning back.

Very quickly, the sounds of footsteps could again be heard outside.

It was the young manservant, bringing with him a grizzled old doctor rushing hurriedly. Behind the old doctor, there was a little girl with braids in her hair, panting as she carried the heavy medicine box, beads of sweat appearing on her forehead.

“Young master Ye, the doctor has come.” The fair faced manservant said respectfully.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, then spoke a couple of words with the old doctor, asking him to treat Qin Lan.

After a short pause.

“Young master Ye, there is no need to worry. Madam Lan has only suffered some external wounds, her internal organs are unharmed. She only needs to ingest some medicine, and rest for a period of time, then she will be fine.” The medical prowess of this old doctor was extremely high, simply taking care of the wounds and giving a recipe for the medicine needed.

Ye Qingyu discovered, that the colour of Qin Lan’s face had turned for the better.

“Thank you for your trouble Doctor Li.” Ye Qingyu hurried to express his thanks.

During the time that the old doctor was treating the injuries, the fair faced manservant had already silently came to Ye Qingyu's side. He had reported the background and history of the doctor clearly to him.

The grizzly old doctor had the surname Li, and was called Li Shizen*, and was one of the famous doctors in the Northern districts. Every generation of his family had practiced medicine. Not only was he extremely skilled in medicinal arts, but his ethics was also admirable. Every month he would spend three days treating the poor people in the poor district free of charge.

It was only that this old man was ill fated. His only son and the wife of his son had long left this world, only leaving a grand daughter behind. The two only had each other for companionship.

After paying the fee, Ye Qingyu respectfully escorted Li Shizen and his granddaughter away.

Seeing the little girl panting and gasping for breath, Ye Qingyu could not help but feel pity for her. He had experience the pain of losing his loved ones, so he especially cherished family. The little girl had long lost both her parents and only had her grandfather. For her, this was misfortune, but at least she had one of her family by her side. Then what about himself?

Ye Qingyu at this moment, sighed with sorrow.

“What's your name?” He turned to look at the manservant.

“Little person, I** is called Tang San. I have been working for this mansion for over four years already.” The little manservant replied deferentially.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He was once someone who belong to the Ye family.

Four years ago, Ye Qingyu was only ten years old. He did not usually order the servants about, so not remembering this little manservant was something within reason. Since he was an old servant from his family, then he was at least trustworthy. From his performance today, he was quick witted and fast to react, it was worthwhile to try him out for a period of time.

This time leaving the academy, Ye Qingyu had asked for three days leave of absence, so he was not in a rush to leave.

Repossessing the ancestral home of the Ye family was the first step. Afterwards, there were an assortment of little things that he needed to take care of, such as putting the mansion and the servants in order. The servants of the Ding family, definitely had some people who had ill intentions and were Ding Kaixuan’s confidants. These people must be scoured out.

Ye Qingyu did not have the time nor interest to take care of such matters.

Originally Aunt Lan, Qin Lan, was an extremely good choice for handling this. But currently she needed to recuperate, and this Tang San could be used as a trial. Any matter that needed a decision to be made would still be given to Qin Lan to manage but the things that needed to be first acted upon, he would give to Tang San to do.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, signalling to all the servants that they were not needed. He returned to the main hall, informing Qin Lan of his idea.

“This...this is too important. This servant...I...I fear I can’t...” Qin Lan was not comfortable with her change in status, stuttering and mumbling.

Ye Qingyu smiled and said: “Aunt Lan is one of the old retainers of my family. You are the person who comprehends everything the most, and is also the person with the final say. When I was small, I grew up drinking Aunt Lan’s milk. Since mother and father is no more here anymore, Aunt Lan you are my closest relative. From now on, everything that happens in this home, you have the power to make the decisions...”

“This cannot be.....”Qin Lan jolted up in shock from her chair.

Ye Qingyu quickly rushed to support her. “Of course it can be. From today onwards, you are the person who has the final say in this home. Everything will need to go through you. Haha, I remember when I was small, Aunt Lan you are extremely formidable. Mother once said, she and father was not skilled in managing householder affairs, and everything was done by Aunt Lan you!”

Aunt Lan recovered some energy, her face becoming slightly more red.

She looked at the Little Grass sitting behind her, hesitating. “This... This...”

Ye Qingyu smiled and gently patted Little Grass’s head. “Aunt Lan, don’t decline this. I have to return to the academy and have to expend far too much energy and time in training, I simply don’t have the time to manage the Ye house. Perhaps in the future, I will also leave White Deer city. You and sister Little Grass, are the only relatives that I have left in this world. This mansion, can be Little Grass’s dowry when she grows up and marries!”

“Ah, Brother Little Yu, you” Little Grass let out a breath of shock. Her face was completely red with embarrassment, her face like fire, not willing to lift up her head.

“This can’t do.” Qin Lan shook her head determinedly, saying in a steel voice. “This mansion is passed on from the Master and the Madam. I, Qin Lan, is willing to manage it for young master, but no matter what, this mansion will forever belong to the Ye family.”

Ye Qingyu had a brief smile.

He knew that Qin Lan’s personality was stubborn and hard headed. Once she had decided on something she would never change her mind so he did not insist. He smiled: “Then I’ll first bother Aunt Lan. The things that will happen later, we’ll speak when it happens.”

This time acting out and regaining the ancestral home, was something that Ye Qingyu only did because it was something that he should do. This was not because he regarded this mansion as something extremely

important; the feelings and emotions involved far exceeded any financial meaning.

Ye Qingyu was clear in his heart, that one day when his strength was enough, he would leave White Deer academy and Deer city behind. He would head towards the court of the royal family of Snow country and investigate the secret that his father had passed onto him in his last words. This ancestral home was only something mental for him; from his perspective, this house held no physical meaning whatsoever.

Qin Lan's wounds recovered extremely rapidly.

Four bitter years had passed and the home once again returned to the Ye family. This woman who had extremely deep feelings for the Ye family once again found motivation and hope for her life. Under the simple instructions of Ye Qingyu after he had gathered everyone, Qin Lan became the number two person of this mansion.

Tang San became the head steward of this home.

Under Ye Qingyu's approval, Qin Lan announced all the servants would have their wages doubled. This action, instantly won the cheering of many people. When Ding Kaixuan was in charge, he was stingy and tight fisted, often withholding the servants' money. Qin Lan's action, instantly won the support of the servants.

Qin Lan had experienced many struggles and waves in her life, and was able to instantly see through many peoples' intentions. Very quickly, she identified and resolutely dismissed the people with poor characters and the confidants of the Ding family. Her swift and decisive action, instantly

established respect.

Ye Qingyu also encouraged the servants with a few words. With a casual smile, he took hold of Little Grass's hand and made this little girl who drank the same milk as him when he was small, into his sister. This way, the position of this little girl was in an instant turned into that of a young lady in this household. Along with this, Qin Lan's position would also rise, stabilising her position.

Very many servants, all sighed with regret in their hearts: The mother and daughter Qin Lan had finally endured to the end. Little Grass from a servant girl at the lowest level, every day washing, cleaning, doing the roughest jobs, right now in an instant, had turned into a phoenix. A life of extravagance awaited her, for she had become the young lady of this home.

This new master of the house, when taking care of Ding Kaixuan and Lei Gongfong and the others, was simply as frightening as a killing Demon king. Who would have known that this person would be extremely friendly and amiable when dealing with the servants. Qin Lan's character was understood by every servant; now that she managed this house, they would definitely have good days in store for them.

As such, all the waves regarding the mansion of the Ye family, had flowed past.

In this world, there was not a wall that did not leak wind. Very quickly the things that had happened here, through different avenues, passed on to the ears of those paying attention, invoking shock from various interest parties all around.

Of course, many people continued to not notice what had happened in the Ye family ancestral home.

This night, Ye Qingyu stayed within this house.

After taking a delightful bath, he stayed in the [Determination garden].

The determination garden was the location Ye Qingyu had lived in when he was small. It was not a large courtyard, with a Wutong tree growing in the middle, at least thirty years of age. It had attracted some unknown birds with nests constructed on its branches. In those years that Ye Qingyu was within this courtyard, was the years that he was the happiest.

After entering again, apart from being deeply moved, his heart was like an ancient well without any ripples.

He sat cross legged under the Wutong tree, breathing meditatively, activating his inner yuan, wasting no time in training.

Time quickly passed by.

Qin Lan and her daughter slept on a soft and smooth bed, not being able to sleep. Originally, Qin Lan had thought that her life would be enveloped with suffering and darkness. Before, when her daughter had slept in the middle of the night, she had silently shed tears of pain. She was worried for herself, she was even more worried for her daughter and she was also worried for the little boy who grew up drinking her milk,

and losing all protection, the boy whose whereabouts were unknown....

Qin Lan feared that one day she would pass away and her daughter would be left alone, in this cold and harsh world, how could she possibly survive....

Who would have thought, this little boy would finally return.

It was like the coming of a deity.

“Mistress has once said, that young master will one day amaze the entire world, like a monarch arriving. Master and mistress, believed in the young master so much...perhaps they were correct!”

Qin Lan suddenly remembered some of her memories.

Little Grass finally fell asleep in her embrace. In these four years, this was the first time that the little girl had slept so sweetly, so at ease, so comfortable. When she dreamed, the corners of her mouth curved slightly upwards.

Chapter 057 – Fatty, Be Gentler

The second day.

By the time Ye Qingyu had ended his training at dawn, Qin Lan had already ordered people to prepare a sumptuous breakfast for him.

Changing into a new pair of clothing, Ye Qingyu sat and ate with a smile together with Qin Lan and her daughter. The little girl hesitated, then had a hungry glance at the food, excitedly sitting next to Ye Qingyu. Qin Lan insisted on standing at the side.

“Aunt Lan, from now on we are family, there is no need to be so estranged. My parents have passed away, I wish that my family can eat breakfast together with me. A family needs to be joyous and harmonious.” Ye Qingyu said with a laugh.

Qin Lan heard this and considered, finally sitting on the other side of Ye Qingyu.

Midway through the meal, Qin Lan wavered slightly and said probingly: “Young master Yu, I want to discuss something with you. I want to sever half of the servants in this house...”

Ye Qingyu drank some fresh shrimp congee*, and said with a smile: “Ding Kaixuan’s remaining people have already been expelled. Now the current servants do not number more than thirty, to take care of this mansion is just barely enough. Why would aunt Lan want to do this?”

“This.....”On Qin Lan’s face, a pained expression was evident. Finally she spoke the truth: “Young master Yu still has to return to return to White Deer academy and expenses cannot be spared for your cultivation. This family does not have any method to earn money, and in the short term there is no way to expand upon our financial resources. The only way is to think of a method to cut our expenses!”

Ye Qingyu grew silent after hearing this and Qin Lan seeing this, thought even he did not have a solution. Qin Lan quickly rushed to reassure him: “But there is no need to worry young master Yu. Sooner or later, a way will be found, the Ye family can definitely continue on.”

As she said this, the main steward, Tang San knocked and entered.

Evidently this fair faced youth did not have a good night’s sleep, with blood shot eyes, and the cuffs of his sleeves was wet with dew. It was a mystery where he went so early in the morning but he was in rare spirits; his entire face filled with excitement. From a low class servant to become the number three man of the Ye family overnight, caused Tang San to be so charged up that he was hardly able to sleep.

“Master, the things you’ve asked me inquire about, I’ve already completely investigated clearly!” Tang San said with respect and deference.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

Seeing this, a slight confusion was in Qin Lan’s heart. She did not know what young master Yu had asked Tang San to inquire about, but

since young master Yu did not elaborate, she did not ask.

“You only just came back? You have not eaten breakfast yet? Sit, let's eat together.” Ye Qingyu looked at Tang San, pointing at a seat.

“Hehe, this is great, hearing master words, I am really a little hungry.” Tang San said with a laugh then sat down promptly, grabbing a bun and began eating, not hesitating in the slightest.

Qin Lan on one side kept giving meaningful looks at Tang San, but Tang San pretended not to see.

Ye Qingyu could not help but smile.

This Tang San did not care about the small details and was quick witted, and had a temperament similar to him. In the future, as long as he was carefully cultivated, he could become one of his trusted people. At least in the future, managing this mansion was not an issue.

After finishing breakfast, Ye Qingyu wiped his mouth. Patting Little Grass on the head he said smilingly: “Little girl, do you want to go out and have a walk. Brother Little Yu will bring you out to play.”

“Good, good!” Little Grass began jumping up and down in excitement.

Between twelve and thirteen years old, was namely the most brilliant part of childhood. Previously she had always been trapped within the mansion, every day and night doing rough and menial labour. Every moment she had to fear for the fierce whip of the steward. Once she

heard that she was able to go out and have a look, Little Grass was so happy she was about to float in the air.

Qin Lan originally wanted to say something, but seeing the joyous face of her daughter, her heart constricted, not saying anything to prevent her in the end.

Looking at young master Yu holding her daughter's hand and accompanied by Tang San leaving the entrance, Qin Lan prayed in her heart. No matter what happens in the future, young master Little Yu, you must be able to bear it!

Everything about the Ye family, right now needed this youth who had not yet grown up to support it.

.....

“Ah, an extremely beautiful little windmill ! ”

“This clay doll is so cute, it's as if it was alive.”

“Heavens, that old grandfather is really amazing, to be able to balance such a long pole on his head!”

“Hehe, that uncle can change his appearance, and he can breath fire!”

Little Grass bounced up and down, her excitement so great it was as if she was a skylark that was just released from its cage. The smile on her

face was the bloom of a flower, sometimes turning her head to look at things that way and sometimes running to another side, her laughter spilling everywhere.

After exiting the Ye family mansion was the wealthy district, and very quickly after that was a concentrated commerce area. The sides of the street was lined with shops and also stalls that were managed from people from outside the city, creating bustling streets, very lively.

Tang San followed beside Ye Qingyu, his back held very straight.

In truth he was also a young man, and had rarely ever came to such a lively place. He was the same as Little Grass, he could not help but feel excited. He could not wait to rush around and have a proper look but he was clear in his heart, that he had only just received young master Yu's appreciation. The way he did things, he needed to have propriety, so he endured and silently followed behind Ye Qingyu.

Within Tang San's heart, he had the urge to cry.

Only when he followed behind young master Yu could he be like a normal person. He could hold his back straight, without the need to bow his head to everyone, nor the need to carefully observe everyone's body language in order not to offend them. When people saw them coming, it was them that lowered their heads and parted!

This time walking on the streets, Tang San felt that he had finally regained his dignity as a human.

The further they went, the closer they were to the flourishing and prosperous areas.

“Master, we’re here.” On the crossroads was a three storied restaurant, Tang San reminded.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

This restaurant had an ancient and classic appearance, constructed from mahogany wood and bricks. From far away, the tempting fragrance of the dishes wafted over. Those who entered the restaurant, was either wealthy or rich, wearing illustrious garments. Evidently this was a high class place.

Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

It was one of the previous properties of the Ye family.

This three storied structure, was the result of the consolidated efforts of Ye Qingyu’s father. Located in the most prosperous area, every year it allowed a significant inflow of money to the Ye family, and was one of the three most important properties of the Ye family.

After the Ye husband and wife had died in battle, this was too taken away through trickery.

The one who invaded this place, was someone that was once indebted to Ye Qingyu’s father. When Ye Qingyu’s father was here, he did everything possible to please but after he had died in battle, he

immediately changed his stance, using some trickery behind the scenes to take over this restaurant.

Ye Qingyu back then was still young, without any possible way of resisting. He had always endured.

Today, it was finally time for the Heavenly fragrance restaurant to return to the Ye family.

To Qin Lan's worries and questions, Ye Qingyu had long thought of the answer. Naturally once the ancestral home of the Ye family was taken back, then the properties of the Ye family also needed to be taken back. Only doing this, did they have the ability to sustain and feed so many people.

“Have you passed my words?” Ye Qingyu walked towards the restaurant.◦

“It has already been given since early morning. I believe that Luo Jin is currently waiting for master you.” Tang San quickly answered.

Ye Qingyu nodded.

At the entrance to the restaurant.

“Ah, this lord you look unfamiliar, is this your first time coming to Heavenly fragrance restaurant? Just order whatever you want to eat, we are not bragging, but this Heavenly fragrance restaurant guarantees your satisfaction...” A very capable server came forward.

“I’m called Ye Qingyu, I’m here for Luo Jin.” Ye Qingyu said simply.

The server’s expression instantly changed, as if facing an enemy. Carefully examining him up and down, with an icy tone and expression: “Boss is at the third floor, follow me.”

Ye Qingyu did not say anything else, entering the Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

The area of the first floor was the largest, able to accommodate hundreds of people. Mahogany tables and chairs were laid out, a very spacious and stylish environment. It was only early in the morning, but the number of customers had already exceeded Tang San’s expectation; it was nearly completely full.

“So many people, business must be good.” Tang San mumbled.

Ye Qingyu heard, but only gave a slight smile.

By the time they had reached the second floor, Tang San instantly quivered. Because in this floor that was able to accommodate around fifty people, apart from some tens of fierce looking wanderers for guests, there were around thirty or so soldiers with spears and swords, emitting an ominous atmosphere.

“Master, this...” Tang San quickly alerted in a small voice.

It was as if Ye Qingyu did not hear his warning, nor saw those people. He continued walking on towards the third floor.

Tang San could only summon his courage and follow on.

After entering the third floor, the light suddenly brightened up.

Golden sunlight came through the window frames, the mahogany flooring was as if it was shining with its own lights. The scarlet red screens that was like flames was particularly intricate, dividing the entire third floor into five separate yet connected areas, appearing irregular but still looking charming.

Compared to the second floor and the first floor , the decoration of the third floor was much more sophisticated and elegant , filled with a rich and comfortable atmosphere.

This place was also full.

“Hahaha, nephew Ye, I heard that you wanted to come here early. Your Luo uncle I have already been waiting for an hour, quickly come have a seat.” In the loud laughter, a middle aged man with an sophisticated atmosphere stood up, smiling and waving at Ye Qingyu.

This person looked to be around forty years old, without any hair on his face. Presumably when he was young, he was a rare handsome young man. He had a long robe on him, using the most famous fabric of Deer city, the fabric from [Li Embroidery]. He possessed a tall figure and emitted a sense of trustworthiness.

This person, was Luo Jin.

A person that was indebted to Ye Qingyu's father, but after he died, immediately became a traitor that forgot everything, someone who had kicked his benefactor in the teeth.

At this moment, it was as if nothing of the sorts had happened. He laughingly greeted Ye Qingyu, still acting like an elder.

Ye Qingyu only stared at him with a faint smile, not saying anything.

His gaze passed from Luo Jin's figure into the surrounding people on the tables around. Ye Qingyu nodded his head with satisfaction saying, : "Jin Shiren from the Lianfeng smithery, Wang Youde from the Murong shop, Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple, Nie Yin from the from the Yin Taoxuan pavilion... these coyotes that have the guts to carve a part of the Ye family's properties are all here. This is too perfect, it saves me the trouble of finding you one by one."

Before he had finished.

Pak !

A fatty wearing the top half of a leather armour slapped his palm on towards the table. He abruptly stood up, his face filled with malicious intent. He said angrily: "Little brat, the Ye family only has a little seed left. If you don't want the Ye family to lose all their descendants, then obediently return to stare at the graves. Wanting to make me vomit

something that your father I have already swallowed, you don't have the requirements to do so!"

Tang San was frightened by this.

This fatty, entire body was covered with blubber. When he abruptly stood up, his entire body fat started quivering, as if it was a mountain made of fat that was shaking, the armour barely holding together. This was Jin Shiren, the manager of the [Lianfeng smithery], the largest smithery nearby. This person was famed for being rude and having an explosive temper.

Ye Qingyu did not react with anger, only had a slight grin on his face. "Fatty Jin, be gentler. Everything of Heavenly fragrance restaurant belongs to the Ye family. This table also belongs to the Ye family, if you break it, then you will have to pay for it."

Chapter 058 – Dead Fatty

“You little brat.....” Jin Shiren was enraged, wanting to say something more.

“Everyone first calm down, calm down. Let’s discuss this peacefully.” Luo Jin came over between them waving his arms, and smiled towards Ye Qingyu. “Nephew Ye, the things that happened in the past you must have some misunderstandings. But this does not matter, at that time you were still young and did not understand matters. Today since you have come, we can sit down and have a good open conversation...”

“There is nothing to discuss.” Ye Qingyu slowly walked in front of the windowsill, his back facing everyone and opened the window. He looked at the bustling crowd down below and said: “One condition. Spit out everything that you have swallowed from the Ye family, return everything that you have taken. I also don’t want to go too far, if you do this than I will write off all grievances and resentment...”

“I peh, who do you think you are. Little trash, have you gone crazy..” Fatty Jin could not endure any, once again slapping the table and standing up. With a dark expression, he shouted: “Boss Luo, you’ve heard what he said. This little trash is climbing all over us. I, fatty Jin will not return anything, I’ll see what you can do to me!”

“Old Jin, lets discuss things calmly...” Luo Jin seemingly had an attitude that he was trying to settle things without it getting out of hand.

“There is nothing to discuss. What kind of person am I, fatty Jin? Hehe,

did you not go and investigate? To be harsh and unreasonable in front of me, you really don't know life and death. A little trash that hasn't even had his hairs fully grown, wanting to threaten me? I peh!"

Fatty Jin saying this, lifted his legs to leave.

As he walked past Ye Qingyu, he smiled sinisterly. "Little kid, the Jiang Hu is not somewhere that you can act in this way. If you have the guts then come to Lianfeng smithery and repeat the words you've just said. I'll make you know, how to write the character Death*!"

Finishing his words, he brought the two experts beside him to leave. His overweight body, came to the stairs and was about to go down.

Ye Qingyu turned around and smiled. "Then how about this...Right now, I'll teach you how to write the character Death."

Saying this, his right hand lifted up and a light suction was in the air.

The fatty Jin's flesh mountain body quivered, then instantly fell back. Under his scream of shock and surprise, he flew through the air, his back landing upon Ye Qingyu's palm.

"You.....release me....."The four limbs of fatty Jin flailed madly, struggling for his life, but it was no use. He shrieked with rage and embarrassment.

"Little brat, you dare ! "

“Release our master ! ”

The two experts following fatty Jin reacted. They floated through the air at the speed of lighting. The moment they acted, strong gusts of wind blew through space, like a storm. Their strength was indeed impressive.

Ye Qingyu lightly laughed, his left hand casually swiping through space.

Instantly the gusts of wind stopped.

The two experts in midair instantly had blood filled their mouth, as if slapped by a gigantic invisible force. They sprawled flat on the floor, two palm indents had sunken into their chests, not being able to get up....
.....

“Little star palm power ! ”

“You.....”

The two experts spurted out blood and exclaimed.

The little star palm power could not be counted as a high class technique, but was instead a common way of striking that utilised inner yuan. Both of them knew how to perform this, but to use it like Ye Qingyu, without any hint of energy fluctuation and be able to injure someone without any signs, was indeed profound.

Through just this simple point alone, these two knew in their hearts, they were not his opponent by far.

Shouts and cries exploded!

The people sitting on the large table finally stood up, every single one of their expressions changing.

“Nephew Ye, lets discuss things peacefully. No need to come to blows, no need to come to blows....” Luo Jin still acted the part of an elder, trying to persuade a child.

“Little trash, release me, quickly release me. You dare treat me like this, you...” The fatty Jin screamed in rage.

“I have never understood, why some people with their lives in the hands of others, would dare to be still threatening and demanding,” Ye Qingyu said contemptuously. “Do you think this is stupidity or is it courage?”

“Nephew, don’t be rash. Quickly release him, you must not kill anyone. If you kill that person, I fear you won’t be able to withstand the consequences...” Luo Jin quickly rushed to persuade Ye Qingyu but his words held a different meaning.

Ye Qingyu gave him a side way glance: “Four years have already passed, why do you still have daggers hidden in your smiles? Do you really want me to kill him?”

Luo Jin was taken aback, instantly saying with a smile: “Nephew you must have a misunderstanding.....”

Before he had finished, the fatty Jin again began crying loudly. “Little trash, it’s best for you to release me. Hehe, the Lianfeng smithery, don’t think you can take it back in your lifetime. If you obediently release me, and bow down to me to beg for forgiveness, then I won’t pursue this matter any further. Otherwise, today there are not only a few people present. If you dare harm a single hair of mine, don’t think you can walk away alive...”

Before he had finished.

The left hand of Ye Qingyu released him, facing the window. The palm of his hand freed him, and the gargantuan figure of fatty Jin, directly fell from the window of the third floor...

“Stop ! ”

“Don’t.....”

“Little brat you have guts ! ”

Everyone was shocked, with some people screaming but everything had already be done.

The cries from fatty Jin became quieter and quieter, the screams

becoming and longer and longer from outside the window. Very quickly, the boom of a heavy impact could be heard and the cries of the fatty abruptly stopped, the sharp cries of the bystanders down below resonating.

Ye Qingyu looked out the window to investigate.

Below the streets, was the fatty Jin who did not know any martial arts. He had nearly become a meat patty, his four limbs twitching and with his eyes opened wide in disbelief. Till the moment of death, he still could not believe that Ye Qingyu would really dare kill him!

The third floor of the restaurant was filled with a deathly silence.

On the faces of everyone sitting there, was a terror that was hard to disguise.

They had never imagined, that this good looking teenager, was the weak boy that they had taken everything away from him four years ago. During their conversation he would so easily act and kill someone, as if he was killing a rabbit or a pig.

Ye Qingyu looked at the crowd and as if suddenly thinking of something, a smile appeared on his lips.

“I have just thought of a joke. A fatty, if he accidentally fell from the third floor, without knowing any martial arts, then what would he become?” Ye Qingyu said with a laugh.

Everyone was taken aback, not knowing the reason for this question.

As everyone subconsciously guessed the answer, with answers such as meat patty, meat mud, corpse and the such, this question was answered by Ye Qingyu instead. “Hahaha, of course, he will become... a dead fatty*!”

There was vaguely someone who snorted, nearly laughing out loud.

Luo Jin’s face had become somewhat difficult.

He suddenly felt, that as if he had miscalculated something. In four years of time, the teenager in front of him, had undergone far too great a change. Where was the slightest hint of the weak smile, the inflexible kind heartedness, the wealthy son that could be bullied by anyone?

Why was it that in his gentle smile, he was able to see a decisive and ruthless killer, with a atmosphere as fierce as wild beast, a demon king, such a tyrannical person?

The Tang San who had followed Ye Qingyu here, was also astounded.

Originally this was only meant to be a discussion. When he saw the people of the second floor, he had realised the opposing party had already made their preparation, in terms of martial force and in terms of legal discourse. They would definitely be the disadvantaged party and Tang San had already prepared himself to beg for mercy for his young master

But in between the light and bland discussion, his master had already taken fatty Jin's life.

Tang San could not react.

He knew that, the following events could not be bode well.

His master was still too young, too rash.

Tang San hurriedly grabbed hold of the frightened Little Grass, placing her behind him. He was about to say some words that could alleviate this problem, but the other people finally recovered from their stunned state.

“Audacious, to kill someone in broad daylight!”

“This is too impudent, too impudent. So what if he's a student of White Deer academy? Can he ignore the laws of the royal family?”

“Hmph, even if I have to risk my life, I will report this to the city leader. He is too arrogant!”

People slammed their tables to leave, screaming in rage.

QiangQiangQiangQiang !

A type of martial artist that were also family servants of these various people, took out their weapons. They all stood up, with a malevolent

gaze, surrounding Ye Qingyu.

Below came the rushing of footsteps.

The soldiers with armour also had their razor sharp weapons unsheathed. They completely filled the space between the staircase of the second and third floor, an killing intent emanating in the air.

“Ye Qingyu, you dare ignore the laws of the country. To kill the innocent, quickly surrender!” A middle aged man with a dark expression shouted, in an imposing manner.

This person was called Nie Yin, and was the master of a dojo called the Taoxuan pavilion. He was also one of Ye Qingyu’s targets today.

The Taoxuan pavilion also used to be one of Ye family’s property. Ye Qingyu’s father had founded this martial arts dojo and Nie Yin was the head instructor of this dojo in the past. He seemed cautious and conscientious, but after the death of Ye Qingyu’s father in the battle, he repossessed the dojo for his own uses. Getting rid of all who would not follow, he cruelly murdered and caused the deaths of a few instructors who was still loyal to Ye Qingyu’s father.

Nie Yin could also utilise yuan qi and was therefore not as afraid. Standing out, he condemned Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu coldly gave him a glare, saying icily: “You also look to die?”

Only through a gaze, did Nie Yin’s heart froze over. Terror and fear

inexplicably rose in his heart, finding it hard to breath, and he really could not say anything more.

Ye Qingyu's gaze left him, landing on the Luo Jin still with a faint smile on his face. "Look at your devious face. You are originally a shameless and brazen trash, and yet you have to pretend to uphold justice and righteousness. Its been so many years, aren't you tired..."

Luo Jin had never been mocked to such an extent before. His facial expression abruptly changed, saying: "Nephew, you..."

"If you dare call me nephew one more time, do you believe I'll slaughter you at this very instant?" Within Ye Qingyu's eyes, there was a glint like that of a sword unsheathed, as if he was a prehistoric beast that was about to begin killing at the slightest provocation.

Luo Jin's heart suddenly pulsated. A cold air travelled from his spine to his head, nearly exploding his mind. A terror that he had never experienced before, enveloped him.

No matter facing what terrifying character before, Luo Jin firmly believed with his glib tongue, he was able to persuade the opponent. But this youth would not even give him the chance to speak.

Chapter 059 – The Consequences Of Taking The Initiative

But this time, facing the teenager that he thought was under his control, Luo Jin really did not dare to utter another word.

He did not doubt in the slightest, that if he spoke another sound, Ye Qingyu's killing intent would explode like thunder, without the slight trace of hesitation.

“Hmph, the bravery of an ignorant person.” Luo Jin coldly snorted in his heart.

But he did not say anything more.

Ye Qingyu held the hand of Little Grass, coming in front of a table next to the window.

The people sitting at the table looked at each other. Finally, they quickly moved aside. The killing aura of this teenager, his hands covered in blood**, turned their faces pale, not daring to come near.

“Sit.” Ye Qingyu placed Little Grass by the window, reclining by the windowsill himself, coldly staring at the people of the third floor.

“Young master Ye, we should discuss this peacefully, perhaps we can ...” Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple said standing up, wanting to

say something more.

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, cutting him off, his face filled with impatience.

“Fine, fine, I’m can’t be bothered to listen to your useless words. I give you half an hour of time, obediently return the Ye family properties back and there is no need for blood to be shed here anymore. Other, the fate of fatty Jin will be your example!”

He was more than intense !

He was more than tyrannical !

This was simply arrogance !

A bare and naked arrogance !

In truth, Ye Qingyu did not want to discuss terms with these scum at all. With the things they did to the Ye family years ago, killing them hundreds of times over was still not enough considering how many people loyal to the Ye family was driven to death by them. But today was not the day to settle these grievances, and Ye Qingyu did not want to make the matter even bigger, starting a slaughter here now.

But if this crowd of scum still foolishly continued to resist, then Ye Qingyu would absolutely show no mercy.

Since he had chosen to act today, then naturally he had some cards hidden up his sleeve.

However, at this time —

“Hahaha, an extremely confident expression. Only being in the White Deer academy, you have forgotten how high the Heavens is or how deep the Earth goes. Killing someone in broad daylight, threatening peaceful citizens, is this the things you have learnt in White Deer academy?”

Loud laughter.

Within the hall, one of the bloodstone dividers was pulled apart.

Three people that looked like military officers, was sitting beside a large table in a private room. On the table was exotic delicacies, fragrant fine liquor and with dancing women accompanying them, in the midst of a drinking party.

Previously the rune formation dividers had blocked sound from passing through and the sounds within could not be heard at all with no one noticed anything. Now that the divider was gone, it was as if another dimension had suddenly appeared from beside the people.

The person who spoke, was namely one of the military officer sitting in the middle.

This person looked to be around forty years of age, with a hooked nose, and a deep black armour. He emitted an imposing pressure, wearing a

steel helmet and a long blade by his waist. From his appearance, he should be a military officer of the Northern general.

The two sitting beside the hook nosed man, was slightly younger. The person on the left had the same black armour as him, but from the style, it seemed that his military position was slightly lower than the hook nosed man. The person on the right had the appearance of a scholar, holding a fan, with a long black beard and cold smile on his face.

Seeing these three people appear, everyone in this floor let out a long breath of relief.

Apart from this three people, there were also ten other people in distinct armour, armed with swords and spears. Everyone one of them was filled with a killing aura, standing like a black iron statue. Very evidently, these were the elite soldiers of the military.

Luo Jin laughed.

Deep within his eyes, a cold light appeared. A shred of triumph was in his gaze as he looked towards Ye Qingyu.

“Ahah, nowadays the students of White Deer academy, are becoming worse and worse. A person who had not been learning for more than half a year, is coming out as a fox to exploit’s the tiger’s might**. Running out to scare and threaten merchants who peacefully abide by the law, tututut!” The middle aged man drank the alcohol next to the dancers, shaking his head with an icy smile.

Ye Qingyu only smiled at this.

“So Luo Jin and these bunch of scum, the reason they still resisted until now, was because of you three....Right now, have you finally shown all the cards under your sleeve?” Demon King Ye was still casually reclining in the chair next to the window.

The appearance of the hook nosed man and his two friends, did not cause Ye Qingyu to display any expression of surprise.

At the same time.

Tang San had always carefully observed Ye Qingyu's expression.

Seeing the young master's confident expression, he relaxed slightly. The things that had happened here today had really made Tang San's heart beat as if he was on a wild ride, always holding his breath tensely.

But he did not know why, when things were developing to its climax and the situation was more and more explosive, he instead let out a breath of relief.

As they were speaking——

Pak !

The military officer sitting to the left of the hook nosed man, suddenly slapped his enforcement manacles upon the table, causing the female

dancer beside him to turn pale. He stood up, staring and coldly saying: “Killing someone in broad daylight, even if you are a student of White Deer academy, don’t think you can escape responsibility. Little brat, just obediently surrender and follow us to the interrogation prison!”

The interrogation prison, was the place where local criminals were questioned in Deer city.

It was a rumoured place that people went there breathing normally and when they came out, would be on their last breaths. A place where you enter complete and intact but came out crushed into pieces. An eerie prison reeking of blood. Very many people, just by hearing the words interrogation prison, was enough to frighten someone stiff.

Once these words were spoken, the expression of everyone on the third floor changed.

A contemptuous expression was shown on Ye Qingyu’s face.

“Interrogation prison, haha, an extremely famous name. If this was in the past, hearing the snap of the manacles, I wonder how many people will be terrified out of their wits. To pretend to be awe inspiring, no one can be even compared to you...” Saying this, Demon King Ye gave off a smile. “It’s a pity, a pity...”

“What’s a pity?” The military officer coldly grinned.

“It’s a pity that your small Northern interrogation officer, does not have the power to arrest me.” Ye Qingyu said, slowly placing the heroic brass

badge on his chest, all the while with a grin to the military officer.

The military officer at first only had a cold expression, his expression looking at the brass badge with a look of disdain. First was contempt and scorn, but then he suddenly realised what it was. His mockery was gone, to be replaced by a serious expression.

The scholar on the right side of the hook nosed man, at this instant, his countenance also changed entirely. There was a slight surprise, then hurriedly he came beside the hook nosed man, and whispered something in his ear.

Very evidently the hook nosed man was the leader among these three men, with the highest position.

Originally he had his arms around two female dancers, one mouth of meat and another mouth of alcohol. He only drank and eat, enjoying himself. From the start, he did not even give Ye Qingyu a glance, not even sparing a look for Luo Jin and the others. He had the posture of someone extremely high up, as if that just by him appearing was some sort of reward for the people here.

But after the words of the scholar, he finally lifted his head.

A heated glare like a sword, landed upon Ye Qingyu's face. Then, it focused on the brass heroic badge shining in the sunlight. Half a moment later, his eyebrows shifted down, standing up and gesturing. "We're leaving!"

Finishing his words, he brought his two underlings and the ten soldiers, leaving the meeting and heading towards the staircase.

Such an abrupt change, had not been predicted by anyone.

The triumph in Luo Jin's face froze over, then was surprise, a hint of panic in his eyes.

“Captain Yu, you...this...” Luo Jin was finally in a panicked alarm, wanting to persuade the hook nosed man and the others to stay.

This hook nosed man was named Yu, his full name being Yu Luosheng. He was a captain under the Northern military leader, and could be counted as a middle level military officer.

Yu Luosheng turned his back and gave Luo Jin a glance. A faint shake of his head, without saying anything and in the blink of an eye he was already at the staircase.

The guards and the servants who had originally rushed up, everyone one of them looked at each other in bewilderment. But they did not dare to block the path of Yu Luosheng and the others, rushing to open a way for them to pass.

But at this time—

“Stay there!”

The Ye Qingyu who had not spoken, suddenly opened his mouth.

Yu Luosheng's body stopped. Turning around, he glared at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu was not frightened in the least by the expression of the captain, that seemed as if he wanted to devour someone. He blandly said: "Aren't you going to capture me to the interrogation prison? Why are you suddenly leaving in such a rush?"

The young military officer who previously had said the brash words, suddenly had a face as red as a pig's liver. Anger and hate filled him, he bit his lips and was about to say something when the scholar hurried to stop him.

"No wonder the Ding Kaixuan with a position of nobility, was willing to leave the mansion. So the Ye family really has a heroic badge that was passed down. Young master Ye, this time it was us that was too rash. The matters concerning the Ye family, we will not interfere in again, young master Ye can handle it as he pleases. Afterwards, this restaurant, me and captain Yu will place special attention onto it."

The middle aged scholar cupped his hands together, saying with a smile.

In reality, the heart of this scholar, really wanted to swear and curse.

Ding Kaixuan that crafty old man, no wonder he did not act himself. After losing the mansion he had worked so hard to obtain, he did not dare take revenge and instead hid within his old mansion venting his

anger. So it was because of this badge.

This heroic military badge, had a significant weight within Snow country.

The person wearing this badge, as long as they had evidence that this was passed down legally, had a position equal to that of a noble. They did not need to dismount and rid themselves of weapons when seeing the monarch nor did they need to bow down to government officials. They had many special privileges and an unusual position. Even if they committed a crime they could not be interrogated with physical instruments, and needed the judgement of a royal member of Snow country before they could be convicted.

For example the fatty Jin Shiren, who kept calling trash and scum at Ye Qingyu who had inherited this badge, was equal to directly insulting the nobility and the royal family. As a tiny little merchant, without any position of nobility, such a crime was enough for his tongue to be sliced off and executed. Dying through falling in the streets, was a mercy for him.

Fatty Jin deserved to die, and as the person who killed him, Ye Qingyu had obviously committed no crime. And to capture Ye Qingyu to interrogate him, was simply just a joke unless the northern military leader and the officer of the interrogation prison did not want to live anymore.

The reason that the scholar wanted to swear and curse, was because Ding Kaixuan and the others had evidently known that Ye Qingyu had such a badge. However, they had not informed himself or Yu Luosheng at all. They were used like idiots by him, forcefully taken the initiative. The

result was that they had gotten into a mess and trouble, losing all their face

And they had also offended Ye Qingyu.

Chapter 060 – Returning Heavenly Fragrance Restaurant

If Ye Qingyu was only a teenager with average talent, even if he possessed the heroic badge, his threat would not be too high. Similarly, if Ye Qingyu was only a normal student of White Deer academy, offending him would not be something to be fearful about. But this youth was a White Deer academy student and the inheritor of a heroic badge. When these two were added together, this was something that was frightening.

This type of person, would sooner or later grow up.

Even just considering the present, the entire Northern military office may not be enough to handle him anymore, not to mention the three officers.

They were in the eyes of common citizens —no even in the eyes of wealthy people, big shots. But in front of the brass heroic badge of Ye Qingyu, the identity of their position as military officers was laughable.

As someone in the army, to offend someone who had inherited the badge of the royal family of Snow country, there was not a stupider thing to do than this in the entire world.

This was why the scholar threw away his face, and had a friendly tone when he spoke.

He knew today they were used by some people as the spear head, to

probe Ye Qingyu or perhaps it was due to some other reason. Either way, their current position was not something to be envied. They must think of ways to repair the relationship between them and Ye Qingyu, only then could they regain some benefit.

Ye Qingyu heard this and his expression remained calm and peaceful.

In these four years, Luo Jin and the others had completely taken over the properties of the Ye family. This was a bare and naked robbery and repossession, something that was against the laws of the country. However they did not receive the slightest retribution or consequence from their actions; the positions of the Luo Jin and the others were just servants and merchants at that time. Evidently, to be able to do this, they must have the support of someone in the background.

In these four years, the Ye family properties had accumulated wealth and riches from. Luo Jin and the others had received a part of it, but the person behind them must have received much more.

The person who was able to do this, was not someone of the army, but someone of the nobility.

“I don’t care you received who’s order to support Luo Jin, and I don’t care what has happened in the shadows in these four years. From today onwards, all the property of the Ye family, must be returned to the Ye family. If there are still people not willing to give up, and still wants to obstruct me, then I don’t mind making this matter even bigger. The Ye family has once bled before so...” Ye Qingyu’s fingers lightly clasped the table. “Today’s Ye family, is also not afraid of shedding blood.”

The tone of which he used to spoke was very calm.

But every person, was able to discern from the calm tone of this teenager a steel will and a determination that was unquestionable. It was a martial artist's heart that would not accept any negotiation.

The aura of the hook nosed man, could not help but completely disappear at this very moment.

“No need to worry young master Ye. Me and my brothers, from now on the matters regarding the Ye family, the northern military will not question again.” The hook nosed man nodded his head, expressing his goodwill and then left with his soldiers, not daring to tarry in the slightest.

Within the northern military office, Yu Luosheng could be counted as a mid level officer. He could not hide the sky with one hand*; even though he had a military position, he was not a nobility nor did he have a title. He was only a soldier, especially in front of an heroic badge holder, he could not be the slightest impudent or presumptuous.

As they looked at Yu Luosheng and the others departing, there was a deathly silence in the hall.

Some people had still not recovered.

Some people had already recovered. Swallowing their saliva down their throat with difficulty, they looked at the youth bathed in golden sunlight next to the windowsill, their faces covered with fear and shock.

And there were some people who acted as if they were undergoing a funeral, experiencing an apocalyptic fear.

Such as Luo Jin.

The middle aged merchant who had been from the very beginning, absolutely sure he could devour Ye Qingyu, his expression right now was as if he had just eaten a dead rat. His smile that was produced using his best efforts, was even more disgusting than if he had just simply cried.

“Young master Ye, I.....”Luo Jin said simply, kneeling to the floor.

He finally understood how laughable and ridiculous he was. He finally understood, in the world where strength was the ruler of all, the techniques he used to manipulate people, the techniques that he was so proud of, in the eyes of the truly strong and the nobles, was not even worth a mention.

This kneel, signified his complete collapse.

Ye Qingyu gave Luo Jin a glance, seeing him painfully weeping in front of him. His brain could not help but think of when he was young, this person in front of his parents treating him especially well, with kindness and gentleness. Purchasing various items and his fake joyful smile...

“Not crying until you see the coffin, not giving up until reaching the Deer river!” Ye Qingyu sighed lightly.

This sigh, caused Wang Youde from the Murong shop and Dong Mingtong from the Miao Yu temple to be frightened out of their wits. Thinking that Ye Qingyu was intending to kill them, they knelt on the floor with a thud.

“Young master Ye, we were wrong...”

“Forgive us ! ”

“I am willing to handover the Murong shop, completely giving it over...”

“The Miao Yu temple from now on, is also the property of the Ye family. Young master Ye please show your mercy, spare me, I beg you spare me...”

The two kowtowed like a hammer pounding garlic.

Ye Qingyu did not say anything, his gaze landing on Nie Yin.

Nie Yin who came from a martial artist background, had an sturdiness that Luo Jin and the other merchants did not possess. Although at this moment he was also frightened, but he still bit his lips and was about to negotiate...

“Fine, you win. As long as you accept my conditions, the Taoxuan pavilion can return to the Ye family....” Nie Yin said bitingly.

Before he had finished.

A cold smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's lips.

The next instant, a shadow passed through everyone's vision. Luo Jin could only sense a figure passing by front of him, and when he reacted, he could only hear Nie Yin's cries from behind him....

He turned around to look.

As his eyes took in the scene, his pupils dilated.

The Nie Yin who was domineering and powerful in their eyes, was struck in the dantian by Ye Qingyu's palm. There was a visible mist that emitted from Nie Yin's body, and a sound like beans popping could be heard....

“Aaa, You....you've crippled my yuan qi, you...” Nie Yin was like a balloon that leaked air, slowly deflating. His face filled with ashen grey, his gaze containing hatred and despair.

Ye Qingyu retrieved his palm.

“This will be interest. Forcefully taking over the Ye family property for so many years, some sort of price must be paid. Normally you use your strength to bully others, today I have crippled your martial prowess. I fear that that are countless people applauding me for this action...”

Ye Qingyu stared icily at Nie Yin.

“You are ruthless...” Nie Yin lifted his hand and pointed at Ye Qingyu.

“Ruthless?” Ye Qingyu shook his head. “Compared to the things that you have done to the Ye family, this cannot even hold a candle...I am no longer the little boy that can be bullied and walked all over.” Ye Qingyu slowly returned by the window,saying : “What right do you have to discuss conditions with me?”

Luo Jin at the others had already been frightened till their faces were the colour of the ground, cold sweat dripping down their cheeks.

The way Ye Qingyu did things was brutal and direct.

Losing his yuan qi, represented that Nie Yin had lost everything. The way he did things was overbearing and he had made not a few enemies. Now that he had lost his martial power, once news of this leaked out, very quickly he would be in a state worse than death.

Then how would this youth take care of them?

Luo Jin and the others state of mind was in a mess, as if they were a prisoner waiting for their judgement. If time could be turned back, they would absolutely not offend the Ye family anymore.

“I also won’t go too far, return the Ye family properties and each one of you pay a hundred thousand of silver taels**, then the grievances between the Ye family will be written off. If you don’t come to provoke me in the future, then I also won’t bother you.” Ye Qingyu clasped the edge

of the table, saying in a bland tone.

“I am willing, I am willing...” Dong Mington rushed to be the first one to accept.

Luo Jin and Wang Youde felt a pain in their heart. After taking over the properties, in these four years of time, the profit added up together was only about a hundred thousand silver taels. Repaying so much, was equal to slicing off their own flesh, but if they were not willing to pay...

Thinking of the consequences of Jin Shiren and Nie Yin, they did not dare to raise an objection at all.

This affair, could be said to have drawn to a stop.

Ye Qingyu did not tarry longer than half an hour. Waiting until Luo Jin and the others had signed and placed their finger prints on the rune formation contracts, he left the remaining business for Tang San to take care of.

For Tang San this was an opportunity but also a test.

If he was able to effectively manage these assorted affairs, then from now on Ye Qingyu could rest his heart and rely on him for a lot of matters. But if his ability was not enough, than Ye Qingyu would naturally consider swapping the steward of the Ye family.

And as for why he had so much confidence in this youth who did not look older than sixteen, even Ye Qingyu himself could not be sure.

Perhaps it was the fact that he himself was only slightly older than fourteen.

And on the other hand, being able to obtain such an opportunity, Tang San was naturally so excited that he could float in the air. But he suppressed his urge to jump up and down, suppressing the tremors in his hearts, trying to give off a sedate and calm appearance. After seeing off Ye Qingyu, he handled the leftover business.

Luo Jin and the others had been completely broken by Ye Qingyu. They did not dare to play any tricks, cooperating to their fullest.

.....

The sunlight outside Heavenly fragrance restaurant, had already become extremely bright and glaring.

The weather these several days were abnormally great, making people feel especially comfortable.

But the old citizens of Deer city, knew that these types of days signified the end of the time of good weather with bright sunlight. Very quickly, within a thousand miles, it was about to enter the season of icy winds and floating snow.

Holding Little Grass's hand and walking down the staircase, the people who previously had gazes of fierceness like wolves and tigers, was at this time like little lambs lowering their heads, as if bowing to their monarch.

Telling the server to package their special food, Ye Qingyu prepared it for Aunt Lan and the others as a small present.

Little Grass carried the food container. As she left the entrance of the restaurant her smile was like a flower blooming in March.

But as Ye Qingyu left the restaurant, he stopped.

Six men wearing pale purple clothing, stood in front of the restaurant as if waiting for someone. The collar of neckline had a vivid pale golden dragon engraved upon it, and under the sunlight, was especially eye catching.

These six people wearing such a clothing stood right in front of the restaurant and passerbys all took a detour to avoid them.

The people from the two river organisation, had also arrived?

Ye Qingyu was slightly surprised.

Chapter 061 – Little Shang Sword

The power groups within Deer city, apart from the army of the Snow country, there were also the noble organisation, White Deer academy and also several large commerce companies. Societies were also a significant power within these groups.

The Two River group was one of the many societies.

Within the northern district, the power of the Two River group was enough to rank in the top ten. The leader of this society's name was Lang Zhong, and it was said that he was an expert in the Spirit spring stage since a long time ago. He had many experts under his command, with high influence especially in the areas around Heavenly fragrance restaurant. This location was under the control of the Two River group.

“Excuse me, are you Ye Qingyu, young master Ye?”

One of the men in violet seeing Ye Qingyu come out, clasped his hands together and said politely.

Ye Qingyu nodded.

“Greetings young master Ye.” The violet man bowed again, then beckoned to the people beside him.

His four companions brought a mahogany box around one metre and sixty centimetres long and fifty centimetres wide towards Ye Qingu.

Seeing them slowly walking with careful steps, the weight of this box was definitely not light. Evidently, the four men each possessing above average strength still felt a strain lifting it and this was reflected in their heavy footsteps.

The leading violet clothed man pointed at the wooden box, saying humbly, “Young master Ye, this is the present our society leader Lang has given you, please accept it.”

“Lang Zhong has given me a present?”

Ye Qingyu frowned.

Many thoughts and guesses passed through his mind in an instant.

It is said that destiny will make enemies meet. This leader of the Two River society, was one of the people that Ye Qingyu had prepared to face.

Because the person who had taken away the only Spirit weapon of the Ye family, was namely Lang Zhong.

This person was different from Luo Jin and the others. Not only did he have strong influence, he himself was already a person who had long entered the Spirit Spring stage. Ye Qingyu through many fortuitous events had also broken through to the Spirit spring stage, but he was only someone with one Spirit spring. There was no guarantee he was the opponent of Lang Zhong.

Therefore after this, Ye Qingyu had indeed acted against Luo Jin and

the others but he did not go out of his way to look for Lang Zhong of the Two Rivers group.

Who would have that the Lang Zhong would have such a good information network, finding Ye Qingyu's location so quickly and even instructing people to give him a gift.

It seems this Lang Zhong already knew what had happened, including the incidents that had occurred in the Ye family and here,

This leader of the Two River group, seemed to be a bit more difficult to deal with than what Ye Qingyu had imagined.

But this Lang Zhong had sent him a present, what intention did he have?

Ye Qingyu hesitated for a moment, then lifted his hand, inner yuan activating.

The four violet clothed men only felt the heaviness in their arms disappearing, and when they looked again, they only saw the scarlet red box was grabbed through the air by Ye Qingyu. Only using one hand, he firmly lifted up the box.

The violet clothed men stared at each other, everyone able to see each others astonishment.

They were the elite of their society yet when the four people lifted this wooden box, still felt it was heavy. Who would have thought that this

youth would be able to carry it so easily. His strength was far above theirs.

Opposite them.

Ye Qingyu felt that this scarlet red wooden box was extremely weighty, definitely not under five thousand pounds. He could not guess what was contained within. His right hand held the lid, lightly unboxing it.

A cold light appeared, an icy and chilling air released from the box.

This breath-taking sight, was as if a moon suddenly appearing in the dark skies.

Ye Qingyu looked inside, and could not help but be dumbfounded.

Within the huge wooden box, was a gigantic sword, thirteen inches wide and five feet long. The blade of the sword was as pure as a pool of limpid autumn waters, clear and flawless. The sword did not have any ridges nor any markings. A radiance stirred, as if it was moving quicksilver, the hilt about the thickness of a duck's egg. On the handles, veins and patterns carved, and it was an azure blue, splitting into three layers each intricately linked, spitting out the blade of the sword.

The style of this sword, was simple and unadorned but held a gorgeous beauty. One glance of it was enough to cause someone to have affection for this weapon.

“This is...the Little Shang sword!”

Ye Qingyu nearly cried out in shock.

This sword, was namely the Little Shang sword that had once belonged to the Ye family, which was taken away by the Two River group. When Ye Qingyu was small, he had seen his father wielding this sword. This was deeply etched onto his memory so he could not possibly be mistaken.

Today, Lang Zhong would return this spirit weapon in such a light and easy fashion?

This was something Ye Qingyu had never thought would happen.

After thinking for a moment, he once again covered the wooden box. One hand holding the box, one hand holding Little Grass, he did not say anything in response to the gift. Passing by the violet clothed men, step by step he disappeared in a street far off...

At the same time.

Approximately three hundred metres away from Heavenly fragrance restaurant.

On the road, the white haired old doctor, Li Shizen took care of his horse and rolled up his coarse sign made of cloth. Slowly rising, he and his granddaughter took away their medicinal boxes, the pair walking away...

A young person wearing rich violet clothing, respectfully watched the two leave.

.....

.....

One hour later.

Ye Qingyu returned to the Ye mansion.

The signboard in the entrance had already been changed, with the large words 'Ye mansion' shining under the light, emanating a special vitality.

Qin Lan had stood there at the entrance looking out since they left.

Only after seeing Ye Qingyu and Little Grass returning unharmed, could she let out a breath of relief. She hurriedly ordered the servants to see to their return.

Ye Qingyu did not linger in the main hall for too long. Speaking a few words, he impatiently returned to his room, wanting to carefully examine the Spirit weapon, Little Shang sword.

He had entered into the Spirit spring stage for a considerable but he still did not possess a Spirit weapon that belonged to him. When facing ordinary martial artists, this was not a big issue but when facing experts

that had Spirit weapons, he would be placed in an absolute disadvantage.

Even though after entering second year, he would begin to learn more skills such as rune formations, casting tools, collecting herbs, distinguishing ores, polishing and grinding. But to create a Spirit weapon, not only was a skilled and practiced technique needed, it also required a high amount of resources. The amount of Spirit ore that was needed, this was not something that Ye Qingyu could support in such a short time frame.

Therefore, in this type of situation, the Little Shang came at the perfect time.

Little Shang sword was something his father had inadvertently picked up. Although it was not famous, nor was it a weapon that could enter the rankings, but it was truly a real Spirit weapon. At least in the foreseeable future, it could satisfy Ye Qingyu's short term needs.

After refining the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu's power would rise to another level.

.....

"You said, young master Ye went to Heavenly fragrance restaurant today?" Qin Lan asked, incomparably astonished.

She was in the main hall, conversing with her daughter. Only through a spur of the moment, did she inquire about what had happened today.

Little Grass vividly repeated all that she saw to her mother.

Qin Lan was completely stunned.

Luo Jin, Wang Youde, Nie Yin and the others were the people who had carved up the Ye family. These were the people that Qin Lan had hated the most but she did not have any power to retaliate against. Ever since Ye Qingyu had appeared again and retook the Ye family, Qin Lan had always worried that if these people find out the things that had happened here, another incident would occur.

Qin Lan worried that Ye Qingyu lacked experience, and had the brashness of a youth, and would do something impulsive. This would cause Luo Jin and the others, these old foxes that ate people without spitting out bones, to fall into their traps that they had created. Young master Ye would not be able to hurt the tiger but rather be injured by it.

She had originally planned to find a time today, to persuade Ye Qingyu, to take his time in making a decision.

Who would have thought.....

In Qin Lan's eyes, the most terrifying opponents, was casually solved by master Ye.

"It looks like I'm really getting old..." Qin Lan was both overjoyed and deeply moved. The growth of Ye Qingyu had greatly exceeded her imagination. This also made this loyal woman realise, that she and young master Ye, was no longer people of the same world.

Very quickly, Tang San came back along with a large variety of contracts and seals.

“Haha its all resolved, I have done something to be proud of...” Tang San was incomparably excited, after greeting Qin Lan, he asked again: “Where is young master Ye?”

“Brother Ye has confined himself in isolation. He said that the matters of the family, brother Tang San you can just discuss it with mother and make a decision.” Little Grass said crisply.

She had swapped into silk garments fitting for a young lady, making Little Grass even prettier, as if a little jade doll. It was only that she had been malnourished for a significant period of time, causing her to be too thin and skinny.

Tang San and Qin Lan then quickly discussed the matters regarding the retaken property.

For the Ye family to grow prosperous again, there were too many things to take care of. Both of them had the same determination, to construct a stable family for young master Ye, so he could do whatever he wanted without any worries.

The things that had happened made the two people realise, that Ye Qingyu was a crouching dragon. Today, he was still slumbering but sooner or later, he would soar in the sky, ascending throughout the clouds and leaving them behind. The Ye family could not always rely on him.

.....

Ye mansion.

Determination garden.

Ye Qingyu stood with his legs apart, within the courtyard.

There was an invisible air flow surrounding his entire body, the inner yuan of his body being activated to its fullest. Strong qi rushed throughout his four limbs, and the three metre space around him was as if air had solidified. Vortexes of air appeared around him...

The Little Shang sword floated above his head, and spun around in a high rotational speed not discernible by the human eye. On the handle of the sword, there was a pale silver rune inscripted upon it that emitted an azure blue radiance, as if it was alive, slowly wriggling.

This line emitting a blue glow, was namely the rune formation.

A spirit weapon, was a weapon made from many different and rare materials. But the most important thing was, inside the weapon and on the surface of the weapon, there would be scriptures that could or could not be seen, personally made by rune masters.

These rune formations, through the activation of the martial artists inner yuan, could give birth to a strange kind of energy. It allowed the

martial artist's offensive or defensive power to greatly increase and some special Spirit weapons, through the coordination of the martial artist, was able to display formidable power similar to high class yuan techniques.

In general, martial artists possessing spirit weapons could easily withstand and kill three or four martial artists who did not possess Spirit weapons.

On the previous battle, if Qin Wushuang had refined and submerged the [Great Zhou sword], and made the sword truly his, turning the [Great Zhou sword] into his life Spirit weapon then Ye Qingyu would not have a chance.

It was a pity that the Qin Wushuang then, had not entered the Spirit spring stage for long so his foundation was still unstable. He did not have complete control of the [Great Zhou sword] and could not fully utilise the full power of that Spirit weapon, and in the end was defeated by Ye Qingyu's herculean strength.

“So this is why Spirit weapons are so fantastic and astonishing.....”

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan all around him, streams and streams of yuan qi like stands of light, travelling throughout his entire body. Finally, it transformed and appeared on his arms, as it was tiny bolts of minute lightning, spreading throughout his entire body. It was like a lightning shackle, wrapping around the Little Shang sword.

Chapter 062 – The First Spirit WeaponChapter 062 – The First Spirit Weapon

To refine a spirit weapon, the first step was to insert your inner yuan into the body of the weapon, to understand the rune formations within.

For Ye Qingyu, this process possessed a slight risk.

After all, Ye Qingyu had not been to any of the classes in the sophomore year and did not attend any lessons regarding runes and formations. He was only a layman, but through immersing himself in the library everyday, and also going to the libraries of those of higher years, he understood the basics and theory behind these formations. He had some partial knowledge so he therefore decided to give it a try.

The Little Shang sword vibrated, the blue lines on the sword handle becoming more and more evident, slowly spreading towards the area of the blade.

“The areas when the lines has already been activated and grown, represents that the runes and formations in that area have already been successfully immersed by inner yuan, and the formation within can be activated...”

Ye Qingyu made his decision.

His mind was clear and blank. Within his dantian world, the water of his Spirit spring rose dramatically and soared in the sky. It transformed

into a great mist that entered into the four limbs and the hundreds of bones of Ye Qingyu, finally entering the Little Shang sword continuously.

From the doubt and hesitation he had at the start, at this time, Ye Qingyu finally began to understand how to refine this Spirit weapon. The somewhat incomplete theory that he had read in books regarding runes and formation, through this process, gradually became clear and distinct.

The process of instilling his inner yuan into the Little Shang sword, became smoother and smoother.

If there was someone beside him observing, they would discover that the blue strands of light appearing on the Little Shang sword, was as if they were vines that were crazily growing, heading ever upwards and completely surrounding the Little Shang sword.

At this instant Ye Qingyu could sense, that this Little Shang sword was like a life form that had slept for who knows how long in the endless darkness, and was being awakened bit by bit.

These strands of blue light continued to grow throughout the sword, as if they were veins and arteries, beginning to function.

“This feeling, is really too mysterious, its like.....its like the Little Shang sword is blending into my blood, combining into one entity.”

Ye Qingyu could not help but mutter to himself.

Two hours had already passed. The entire body of the Little Shang

sword, was finally entirely enveloped by the blue strands of light. This was a sign that the rune formation within the sword had been completely activated.

When this sword had been completely infused with Ye Qingyu's inner yuan, then it would have been refined by him.

Ye Qingyu was able to sense the power of this Spirit weapon.

A type of information that was hard to describe using any language, appeared in Ye Qingyu's mind. The power of this sword and the limits of inner yuan it could withstand, became clear.

Ye Qingyu picked the sword up.

The Little Shang sword floating above his head was firmly in his grasp.

The Spirit weapon in his hand, compared to when he had not refined it, had an entirely different sensation. Before refining it, it was extremely weighty being at least several thousand pounds and icy cold, with a rough texture. And now it was as if it was a part of his arm, he could not sense the weight at all, and it was warm as if touching a lover's skin...

Ye Qingyu swung the sword out.

Without activating his inner yuan, a wave of air was cut through by him.

Inner yuan was agilely moving within the sword blade, and with a slight activation, the three feet of the cold sword blade would emit an icy and dense aura, causing people to feel terrified.

Through a will of Ye Qingyu's heart, accompanied with a flash of blue light, the Little Shang sword disappeared in his hand.

He used inner vision.

With the dantian world, in the location of the Surging spirit spring, it had already turned into a small lake. The eye of the spirit spring was namely in the centre of the lake and within the eye of the spring, the Little Shang sword has sunk in completely, entirely being submerged.

After refining the Spirit weapon, it could unite with the holder, entering the wielder's body and become submerged into their Spirit spring, nourishing within. If nurtured properly, the level of the Spirit weapon could perhaps be raised.

Little Shang sword could be counted as a low class Spirit weapon. If Ye Qingyu was able to find some suitable rare ores and materials, newly refining it and improving it through special techniques, then there was the possibility of it becoming a middle class Spirit weapon.

The higher the classification of the Spirit weapon, the more inner yuan could be instilled within and hence have a greater power.

“Little Shang sword, is the first Spirit weapon that I possess in my life.”

Ye Qingyu sighed with regret.

This was the last object that his father left him.

He continuously practice summoning the Spirit weapon. With a will, the Little Shang sword appeared in his hands, abruptly disappearing and appearing floating beside his head. It flew and soared according to Ye Qingyu's will.

Very quickly Ye Qingyu came to the conclusion that with his current inner yuan, he could only control the Little Shang sword to attack and defend within ten metres of him. After ten metres, the power would greatly diminish and it would not be enough to hurt martial artists of the Spirit spring stage.

This result, was already quite to his satisfaction.

After all, he still had not completely merged with the Little Shang sword, and his inner yuan had not yet completely submerged into the blade of the Little Shang sword.

“It has already been three months since the successful excavation of the first Spirit spring. The Spirit spring has already overflowed turning into a small lake. According to the scrolls, I have already reached the stage of basic mastery and can attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring within my dantian!”

Storing away the Little Shang sword, Ye Qingyu considered in the light of the setting sun.

In general, after the martial artist had excavated the first Spirit spring in their dantian world, if the water overflowed and became a small lake, then they could attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring. According to the theory of the yuan qi martial way, after excavating over ten Spirit springs, you could attempt to break through into the Bitter sea stage.

Ten Spirit springs, was the lowest requirement for martial artists of the Spirit spring stage to break into the Bitter sea stage.

Of course, some genius martial artists would not be satisfied with a mere ten Spirit springs. Rather, they would prepare slowly and diligently for future success, not being impatient about raising their overall grand level. They would excavate until twenty, thirty, or even more Spirit springs, reaching their limits then attempt to break into the Bitter sea stage.

Doing it this way, after entering the Bitter sea stage, their strength would increase explosively and a normal Bitter sea expert would not be their opponent.

From some perspective, the number of Spirit springs within the Bitter sea, represented the potential of a martial artist.

Of course, the number of Spirit springs was not something that you could increase as you please. Every one's body had a set upper limit. If your natural endowment was inadequate, then forcefully excavating past this upper limit would have devastating results. The least serious consequence would enter into the state of demonic fire, and the most serious consequence would be that their flesh body would transform and

collapse into dust, disappearing within the world.

Ye Qingyu had read some anecdotes within the library about this.

According to legend, in the ancient age, there was a peerless genius of the human race that had managed to excavate over ninety nine Spirit springs, remaining in the Spirit spring stage for over a hundred years. Once he broke through and entered the Bitter Sea stage, in a instant he was invincible when facing opponents of the same stage.

Afterwards, this peerless genius rose and rose in the face of adversity, becoming the pillar that supported the entire human race. Resisting thousands and thousands of alien races, protecting a domain for the entire human race, he left behind countless legends.

There were also people of legendary strength within the human race, such as existences like the three Sovereigns, five Emperors and the eight Supreme, that had also prepared long and diligently in the Spirit spring stage. After many fortuitous encounters, they all had excavated over ninety Spirit springs, and in the end became a ultimate expert.

So it could be said, the cultivation and choice that occurred in the Spirit spring stage, was enough to affect the future success of a martial artist and determine what heights they were able to reach in the future.

Ye Qingyu was now in the Spirit spring stage, so he must be particularly mindful of what he decided.

.....

The third day.

The Ye mansion after the humongous transformation, finally settled down from their chaotic and disordered state. Qin Lan and Tang San, performed exceptionally in this regard; one managed inside affairs and another managed outside affairs. Through the efforts of these two, it allowed the Ye family to function successfully.

Li Jinji, Miao Yu temple, Yin Taoxuan pavilion, these properties had already been completely transferred and returned. Tang San was so busy that he became dizzy and woozy, but thankfully there were no errors that occurred.

After finishing breakfast, Tang San and Qin Lan both respectively prepared tens of scrolls for Ye Qingyu's inspection.

"The accounts of this mansion all these years, is all here, for the inspection of the young master."

"The five properties outside has already largely been investigated clearly. This is the accounts of it all these years, and also the financial resources and functions, is also within!"

The two stood by the side.

One glance was enough to make Ye Qingyu feel nauseous.

Regarding these matters, he did not have the slightest interest.

“Eh...These types of things, you should just handle by yourself. There is no need to ask me.” Ye Qingyu set the accounts by one side and shook his head with a bitter smile. “Besides, even if I personally looked it over, I would not understand anything!”

Tang San was taken aback, then let out a rueful laugh.

Qin Lan hesitated slightly: “But...”

Ye Qingyu waved his hands, saying: “It’s all good. My break is about to end, the matters regarding the family will need to be relied upon by you.” Saying this, from the inter dimensional pouch, he took out a jade scroll. “This is the jade scroll of the White Deer academy that are used to pass messages. If you encounter any incidents that you cannot solve, then bring this jade scroll to the academy. There will be someone who will pass on your message.”

The jade scroll was given to Qin Lan.

Pausing, Ye Qingyu spoke again: “Little Grass is coming of age. If she has the intention to enter the White Deer academy, in the upcoming examination next year, she can go and attempt it...” His gaze landed on Tang San. “Your age has already passed the limit and you cannot enter the White Deer academy. If you really want to pursue martial arts and if you have time, go to the Taoxuan pavilion and learn from some of the teachers there to train. Possessing some martial arts, is beneficial no matter what happens.”

Tang San nodded his head enthusiastically.

.....

.....

By noon time, Ye Qingyu had already returned to White Deer academy.

Returning to the dormitory to pack away his stuff, someone came to inform him of the location of his new dormitory and his room number. And they also passed on an assortment of things he needed to do to report in.

It was as the head of administration had said, everything had already been settled.

Jumping to the second year class, Ye Qingyu would have to leave the students of the first year and no longer be living in the same area. He should say farewell but after some consideration, he did not have any friends in first year apart from the little loli, Song Xiaojun.

Ye Qingyu wanted to find her and say goodbye.

But as this idea came to be, he hesitated.

Because he suddenly realised, in this long period of time, it was the little loli who had always taken the initiative to find him. He had never gone in search for her, so until now, he still did not know the little loli's

room number nor which dormitory she was in....

Chapter 063 – Going In Search Of The Little Loli

“A friend such as me, is really not that qualified!”

Ye Qingyu muttered to himself.

Thinking about this, Ye Qingyu crisply decided not to report in the second year but instead went to search for the little loli. At the very least, he needed to say farewell and discover where the little girl lived. Besides, he had prepared some presents for the little loli after returning from outside the academy.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu knew the general direction of the female dormitory.

Carrying the black spear holster with the inexorable spear, Ye Qingyu silently followed the stone path of the living quarters. The breeze caused the light rustle of leaves, with the yellow leaves drifting down covering the entire grass fields. Ye Qingyu realised, that this was his first time he had noticed the pretty scenery around.

It was only that the entire dormitory area was empty, with not a sight to be seen.

Ye Qingyu could feel that something was slightly strange.

If it was as normal, at this time, the area here should be quite busy, with people coming and going. It should be one of the most bustling

times but there was not even a hint of a person here today. Something was up.

Very quickly he arrived at the female dormitory.

On the way, Ye Qingyu still did not bump into any first year students.

It made him feel something was definitely strange.

After questioning several teachers in charge of managing the dormitories, Ye Qingyu finally discovered the little loli, Song Xiaojun's room and dormitory.

But Song Xiaojun was not within the dormitory.

“Come back later. All the students of the first year, have gone to attend the general assembly of the first year.” The managing teacher was a female middle aged woman that looked amiable, and whose strength did not seem either weak or strong. She laughingly said. “Little kid, are you not a first year student? Why are you not attending the general assembly? Could it be that you have skipped class...”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

General assembly of the year?

No wonder on the way here, he did not see any other people. So it was this.

But why was a general assembly held? Could it be that a big incident had occurred within White Deer academy? Normally speaking, unless it was something to do with the honour and reputation of the entire White Deer academy, such a large scale meeting was extremely rare.

Ye Qingyu mumbled several words and promptly left, heading towards a pavilion. Sitting on the stone chair, he sat and silently waited.

The entire dormitory area was quiet and hushed and only the sounds of the wind rustling the leaves could be heard.

Ye Qingyu sat for a while, then felt bored. Instead of just waiting, he closed his eyes and began training in the nameless breathing technique. Very quickly he entered into a rhythmic state, breathing in and out.

The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth around, was quickly gathered at high speed, converging towards Ye Qingyu.

The inner yuan of Spirit spring martial artists, was largely created through absorbing and storing yuan qi from the environment. The every day training of martial artists, their primary aim was accumulate and absorb yuan qi from the outside world into the world and store it within the dantian. When facing an opponent, the yuan qi within would activate and erupt, achieving the aim of harming the opponent.

This type of accumulation and storage, was a long and slow process.

For many martial artists, after a tough and brutal battle, it was very

possible that their inner yuan would be fully expended. They needed to once again accumulate yuan qi from Heaven and Earth. Of course, this process of refilling did not require a length amount of time.

Only experts who had entered the Bitter Sea stage, would their inner yuan in their dantian world grow and multiply without end, without any limits. Therefore experts of the Bitter Sea stage was not too reliant on yuan qi from the outside world, and this one of the reasons that Bitter sea stage experts were stronger than Spirit spring experts.

For Ye Qingyu, this was an important stage that he must continuously absorb and accumulate yuan qi, turning it into his own inner yuan.

For this process, only possessing one Spirit spring was by far not enough. He needed to excavate more and more Spirit springs within his dantian; only through doing this could he absorb and accumulate more and more yuan qi of Heaven and Earth, constantly becoming stronger.

Ye Qingyu practiced the nameless breathing technique and his rate of absorbing yuan qi was incomparably rapid.

Not even fifteen minutes of time had passed when a yuan qi cyclone formed, spinning around Ye Qingyu and creating a strange apparition.

This type of apparition, attracted the attention of the amiable middle aged managing teacher from far away.

“This type of commotion...I know now, so it was this little kid. No wonder he came looking for Xiaojun.” The female teacher finally guessed

Ye Qingyu's identity.

Time passed by minute by minute.

Gradually, two to three metres away from Ye Qingyu's body, the withered yellow leaves became like golden butterflies, swirling around him. The circulation of yuan qi was like a nest of whirlpools, creating a spectacular sight.

Suddenly, Ye Qingyu was able to sense something. Opening his eyes, he stopped his training.

The surrounding yuan qi currently halted abruptly, the withered leaves drifting to the ground and creating a circle around the entire pavilion. It was as if someone had intricately placed and arranged the leaves in a pattern.

From far away, figures could be seen.

The originally peaceful dormitory area, suddenly became heated again.

Female students wearing the academy uniform appeared from far away, laughing and conversing. It seems that the general assembly had ended, with people energetically rushing back into the dormitory or rushing to the practice grounds. The crowd was like a tide heading in from the east, turning into small streams that flowed into different dormitories..

When passing by the pavilion, some female students were able to recognise Ye Qingyu, widening their eyes in astonishment.

Around the ages of fourteen was namely the age where the first awakening of love began. In these past months, within the academy there were a significant number of love stories that had occurred. Very frequently, male students would appear within the female dormitory area, pursuing the girls they liked, so the appearance of a male student was not at all strange or baffling.

Even the favoured child Qin Wushuang, had once appeared below the female dormitory.

But afterwards the matters was slightly disappointing to the students who wanted to witness a perfect love story. This lucky girl who was pursued by Qin Wushuang, after one month of envy, admiration and hatred from the other female students, completely lost favour with Qin Wushuang. The reality was, that this pitiful girl was just a plaything for Qin Wushuang when he was bored from training. After getting tired of her, she was then promptly thrown away....

No matter what the time, the female dormitory had a special attraction towards the male students.

But two people were the exception.

One was Yan Xingtian, this commoner student with exceptional talent. He had never appeared before within the female living area. Afterwards, when he disappeared during the practical wilderness training, this matter was slowly forgotten.

The other person, was Ye Qingyu.

Great demon king Ye had a handsome appearance and amazing talent. In the previous battles he had also displayed incomparable dominance. There were once some busybodies who had done an evaluation, and came to the conclusion that Ye Qingyu was the first year student that was the most masculine. If he had the mood, just through one glance, he could move the hearts of many beautiful girls...

But Demon King Ye did not appear once in the girl dormitory area.

He basically had no contact with female students.

Every day he would be in his living quarters, canteen, martial library and the practice grounds. He would undergo a lifestyle with four dots and one line, making many people suspicious, how Ye Qingyu could endure such a lifestyle.

The only person that Ye Qingyu was close to, was only the little loli Song Xiaojun.

Who would have thought that today, demon king Ye would really appear in the female living area.

If this news was to spread, it could be counted as a major occurrence.

In this instant, some female students crisply decided not to return, foregoing whatever they had to do. They instead stood staring from far away, wanting to see which person demon king Ye was waiting for.

From far away.

The sounds of laughter drifted over.

Tens of female students as if stars surrounding the moon, accompanied a red clothed girl. This red clothed girl was exceedingly beautiful, with an exceptional temperament, her skin as smooth as jade. It was as if she was naturally born with a colourful radiance that caused many female students to feel inferior.

Beside the red clothed girl, there was also a girl in white garments. She was also exceptionally pretty, her white dress drifting about and bringing with her a magical aura. But her face was still a little too young and immature, without the garish and beautiful bearing of the red clothed girl that was able to capture your soul.

“Senior sister Xiaohan, I’ve heard that in the competition between the two academies, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] will be opened?” The white clothed girl asked with a smile.

The smile of the red clothed girl blossomed, saying: “Junior sister Qingluo is right. This time, the commotion caused by the Azure Phoenix students is really too much. The guests are acting as if they are the hosts and showing up the White Deer academy, so therefore the higher ups of the academy is naturally unsatisfied. They’ve decided to hold a direct battle. sword against sword, spear against spear. Therefore the possibility of opening the [Boundary canyon battlefield] is very high!”

“If it is really true, then this is too great. I also want to experience the legendary [Boundary canyon battlefield]” The white clothed girl said

excitedly.

“Senior sister Qingluo your strength is exceptional and your rankings has always been in the top five of the first year. According to the previous criteria of selecting people to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you definitely have the requirements to be chosen. Your wish can absolutely come true.” Another graceful girl appeared by the side, calmly praising and flattering the white clothed girl.

“En, as long as Qingluo works hard, you have the chance to enter the list of the people selected.” The red clothed girl was outstandingly gorgeous, both her smile and frown had an attraction that even appealed to the female gender. With a laugh, she said: “There are many benefits to entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], this is an excellent opportunity, I will definitely recommend you to head teacher Wang!”

“I am too thankful to senior sister Jiang.” The white clothed girl rushed to say thanks.

This group of people had an above average characteristic, with a cordial atmosphere.

Behind them, there was a short and small silhouette that looked foolish and cute at the same time. As if she was a tired doll, she followed along weakly and without strength. She had an expression of disinterest and boredom, wearing a robe that was evidently too large for her, and every step along the way her cheeks puffed up in anger. She did not immersed herself within this group of female students.

Within the pavilion.

In an instant, a faint smile appeared on Ye Qingyu's face.

Every time he saw the little loli's foolish and cute appearance, the mood of demon king Ye, would inexplicably brighten.

He beckoned from far away.

As if their hearts were connected, this bored Song Xiaojun with her head held down, suddenly sensed something. Lifting her head, she could see the Ye Qingyu from far away beckoning to her.

The little girl was dumbfounded and thinking this was an illusion, lowered her head and continued walking.

After walking several steps, she seemed to realise something again. She lifted her head again in shock, rubbing her eyes and confirming that she was not mistaken. Then, she began jumping up and down in excitement, letting out a cheer and running towards the pavilion.

She was like a sprinting and joyous little deer.

Ye Qingyu could not help but be amused by this little loli who was so naturally silly.

The cheer of the little loli, in an instant made the red clothed girl and the others to notice Ye Qingyu's existence. Their gaze landed on the pavilion underneath the shade of the tree, focusing on Ye Qingyu's figure.

“It’s him?” The gaze of the red clothed girl coagulated, stopping her footsteps, not knowing what to think.

The white clothed girl next to her also stopped, a dissatisfied light flashing deep in her eyes. But seeing the little loli’s joyful appearance, the words that she wanted to say stuck in her throat, not able to say it in the end.

Chapter 064 – The World's Best Brother

In the pavilion.

“Brother Qingyu!”

Song Xiaojun leapt into Ye Qingyu's embrace, rubbing her forehead against Ye Qingyu's body. Only after doing that for a while, did she jump away. She was bouncing and cheering, in a very animated state and only after a while, did she finally stop.

Under the gaze of so many people she did not disguise her intimacy with Ye Qingyu at all. Instead, she her truest and most authentic nature.

“Brother Qingyu, have you really come to find me?”

The little loli's large eyes widened, looking like the twinkling of stars and filled with expectation. When she smiled, exposing her tiny little canine teeth, it was as white and as sparkling as miniature diamonds.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

He motioned for her to sit down, and then from the interdimensional pouch, took out the presents he had prepared for the little loli. Apart from two items clothing that fitted her, there were many delicious snacks, dolls and accessories suitable for young girls. It was not anything too precious, but everything had been personally picked by Ye Qingyu.

“Wah, its beautiful, I like it...I like it too much!” The little loli began cheering and hopping about again, tiny stars shining within her large eyes. “Thank you brother Qingyu.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

From far away.

“Ah, demon king Ye has smiled, he has an extremely gentle smile!” A female students cried in shock.

“I did not notice before, but when demon king Ye smiles he’s really good looking!”

“Is this really the violent and brutal demon king Ye? He seems to have suddenly changed into the big brother next door!”

“I really never would have guessed, demon king Ye would like children who have not even matured yet...Sigh, it seems like I am destined not to have a chance!”

Very many females students gossiped with their friends and best friends, teasing and joking.

Ye Qingyu was one of the movers and shakers of the entire first year, with countless people’s attention focused on him. Especially after the battle with Qin Wushuang, many people secretly idolised him. After all,

in this world where the martial path was followed by all, those who were strong were the people who were right.

The tens of female students that surrounded the red clothed girl and the white clothed girl, also conversed in hushed whispers.

Suddenly, a strange smile appeared on the face of the red clothed girl. As if she had just thought of something, she headed directly towards the pavilion.

“Senior sister Jiang?” The white clothed girl was taken aback, then also followed behind her.

The red clothed girl came beside the pavilion, her gaze landing on Ye Qingyu. She said with a laugh, “Junior brother Ye, it seems that you have been in the limelight quite a few times during these few months. Haha, you are the same as you have always been, always fond of showing off and seeking fame. You have not changed at all in these past years.”

Ye Qingyu smiled, not saying anything.

In reality, the moment Jiang Xiaohan appeared, Ye Qingyu had already noticed her. Even though he did not possess the slightest degree of goodwill for this snobbish neighbour and playmate anymore, but he could not deny, this little girl who walked out from the poor district, had a breathtaking appearance. Accompanied by her red academic dress that was like burning flames, she attracted the gaze of everyone. From the start, countless eyes had gathered onto her.

“It seems like junior brother Ye like this junior sister very much.” Jiang Xiaohan’s gaze landed on the figure of Song Xiaojun. In her eyes, was a slight ridicule.

Ye Qingyu still did not say anything.

“That’s right, little children are more innocent and are more easily fooled. They can easily idolise someone.” Jiang Xiaohan let off a barbed smile.

Ye Qingyu maintained his silence.

He even turned his gaze away, with a bland laughter, not looking towards Jiang Xiaohan anymore.

Such an action of neglect, caused an inexplicable rage to be consolidated within Jiang Xiaohan’s heart. She nearly lost control of her emotions and exploded in front of everyone.

She took a deep breath, and the smile appeared on her face again. “Do you not worry, that there will be a day that junior sister will grow up? When she sees the higher peaks of mountains around, when she sees an even more beautiful scenery, and meet better people, that she will not idolise and admire you anymore?”

“Not every person changes so easily and quickly. And not everyone, will not allow others to live happier than themselves, even if that person is their own friend. If Xiaojun in the future can see a better scenery, can meet superior people, then of course I will be happy for her.” Ye Qingyu

smiled, and blandly said. “Also, senior sister Jiang, today you seemed to have said slightly too much.”

“Brother Qingyu, is the best person in this entire world...and he forever will be be.” The little loli was currently devouring a roast duck drumstick, her mouth covered in grease. She said these words loudly, her tone extremely determined and her expression was as if she was merely stating a law of the world.

The white clothed girl, Song Qingluo frowned, giving a meaningful glance to Xiaojun.

The little loli’s smiled disappeared, unwillingly lowering her head, not saying anymore.

“Greetings senior brother Ye.” Song Qingluo walked forwards, bowing her head. “Thank you senior brother Ye for the favour of not challenging me in the elimination matches.” That day Ye Qingyu had acted crazily, challenging everyone on the ten rings. Only her arena was not challenged and Song Qingluo could leave with her dignity intact. This caused her reputation among the first years to rise and for her, this was undoubtedly a beneficial occurrence. Therefore, she needed to thank Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“However, the Song family and senior brother Ye, has different paths and aim. Xiaojun is still young but within White Deer academy, her every action and words still represents the Qingluo merchant company.” On the graceful face of Song Qingluo, a shred of hesitation appeared then

she said with determination: “To prevent others from misunderstanding, if senior brother Ye really wants what is best for Xiaojun, then please never meet with Xiaojun again!”

After these words were said, the expressions of several people’s face completely changed.

“Sister you...” Song Xiaojun said in panicked voice.

“Stand aside, and don’t say anything.” Song Qingluo’s tone was unyielding.

“But...” Song Xiaojun’s face turned red, wanting to explain something.

“Do you really not miss your mother?” Song Qingluo’s tone became severe.

Song Xiaojun was stunned.

The brightness of the little loli’s eyes, in this instant, became dim. She lowered her head, not saying anything.

And the Jiang Xiaohan beside her, finally laughed.

“Haha, this is really interesting. It seems there is a clever person who understands reason and knows what to let go of. Junior brother Ye, it seems like your act, can fool little children but it cannot fool everyone.” She triumphantly blinked her eyes, her gaze evidently holding

a shred of disdain and provocation.

But the predicted result of Ye Qingyu's rage did not appear.

Ye Qingyu pondered for a moment.

Then, a smile appeared on his face.

"En, this was my mistake." Ye Qingyu nodded his head seriously. Looking at Song Qingluo, he said, "Thank you for reminding me."

Such a reaction, caused Song Qingluo to be taken aback.

In her heart, she was slightly guilty. After all, Ye Qingyu had aided her before. If in the end result was that Ye Qingyu would fly in a rage out of humiliation or turn and abruptly leave in anger, Song Qingluo would not mind in the slightest. After, this was her own fault.

But no matter what, she must do this.

The Song family was the largest merchant company in Deer city, and the head of the Song family had received a honorary title from the Snow country's royal family. But he was still not a true noble and in this strict empire where class was above all, power was the centre of everything. Even if you had greater wealth, it could be taken from you at a moment's notice.

Ye Qingyu had directly offended the noble organisation and the city

leader's office, becoming the thorn in many significant peoples' sides. He was an extremely dangerous person, and if Song Xiaojun continued to be his friend, it would negatively affect the Song family. This was absolutely not something the Song family would be able to withstand.

So Song Qingluo was clear in her heart, in such a situation, that between Ye Qingyu and the noble organisation, who should she choose.

On some level, such a choice was a type of humiliation towards Ye Qingyu.

But she did not expect, Ye Qingyu to react like this.

But after being taken back for a moment, the clever Song Qingluo finally understood. Ye Qingyu's reaction, was yet another protection towards Song Xiaojun. Only a true friend, would consider so deeply and completely.

This was demon king Ye, the demon king Ye that because of a disagreement, one man and two spears alone, challenged the entire noble organisation. For Song Xiaojun, he was willing to accept the humiliation of this demand.

There was abruptly an itch in Song Qingluo's heart, feeling a slight jealousy.

She did not know what attribute demon king Ye liked about Song Xiaojun.

Her beauty was higher than this little girl, her talent was not any less than Song Xiaojun. Comparing family background, conversation ability, temperament, skills and ability...no matter comparing what womanly attribute, Song Qingluo felt that she was more superior than Song Xiaojun many many times over.

But demon King Ye, against her expectations, did not treat her with any favour whatsoever.

The other side.

Jiang Xiaohan also rapidly grasped this crucial point, and a jealous flame ignited in her heart instantly.

Ye Qingyu's concern and spoiled favour, had once belonged to her. But it was thrown away by her. She had once thought that she would never regret such an abandonment. But right now, when this girl with a figure like a flat wooden board had obtained it, not knowing why, she was jealous.

And also angry.

"Your performance is really moving." Jiang Xiaohan coldly laughed, clapping her hands. "Ye Qingyu, you've really made a lot of effort. Using such a method, on an immature and inexperienced little loli, is that not too deep a scheme?"

Without waiting for anyone to say anything, the little loli finally could not hold her mouth shut anymore. She disputed loudly: "Utter nonsense!

Drivel! Brother Qingyu is the world's best brother. You are only saying this out of jealousy! You are a bad woman!"

"Shut your mouth." Song Qingluo heard and instantly chided. "Quickly return to your dormitory.

Jiang Xiaohan was in the end a senior sister of the fourth year. Her position was not low and her talent was extremely strong, so she had a considerable amount of influence. She was the target that Song Qingluo had attempted to get closer to during this time.

The little loli lowered her head, crystal like tears glistening in her eyes.

She was really slightly afraid of Song Qingluo, her sister cousin.

Ye Qingyu frowned slightly, not saying anything. He only patted the little loli's head, winking at the little loli. When the little loli lifted her head, her tears turned into laughter again at seeing Ye Qingyu's face.

Chapter 065 – Being Beaten Again

“Return, if there is a suitable time later on, I will come see you again.” Ye Qingyu smiled, placing all the presents along with the dimensional pouch into the embrace of the little loli.

“I will definitely wait for brother Qingyu, you must come.” The mood of the little loli abruptly turned for the better. Rubbing away the tears at the corner of her eyes, she left unwillingly and with reluctance.

Ye Qingyu lifted the black spear holster propped up against the pavilion, preparing to turn and leave.

“Wait a moment.” Jiang Xiaohan suddenly opened her mouth.

Ye Qingyu turned around, his gaze like that of a blade.

“The grand competition between White Deer and the Azure Phoenix three days later, do you dare to participate?” Jiang Xiaohan said, enunciating each word clearly. “Do you dare compete in a battlefield that belongs to true geniuses? Or will you forever remain in hiding in your hole? ”

Ye Qingyu did not emit a single sound, continuing to depart.

A cold light flashed within the depths of Jiang Xiaohan’s eyes. She said: “Song Xiaojun has already entered into the list of competitors in this competition. Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], swords and

spears does not have eyes*. At that time, people will die.”

The footsteps of Ye Qingyu halted for a brief moment, then continued on.

Jiang Xiaohan noticed this, and did not say anything more.

A satisfied smirk, appeared on her face.

In her gorgeous and elegant face, when she smiled there should have been a radiance like that of a spring wind and summer's sun. But for some reason, the female students beside her, could feel a cold air seeping into their very bones at this time. Under her stunning beauty, it seemed that there was a terrifying malevolence hidden within.

“Lets go.” Jiang Xiaohan said to Song Xingluo and the others.

She walked at the very front.

The opportunity had finally come.

“I wonder what will occur when a martial artist who has been slaughtered time and time again is forced to witness with their own eyes, the person they most care about, dying again and again in front of their eyes. And they themselves does not have any power whatsoever to stop this, will this martial artist's determination and will, completely collapse and end?”

.....

.....

[Boundary Canyon Battlefield].

A dimension constructed by a supreme being with runes and formations along with absolute inner yuan. A space flooded with death and slaughter. A battlefield to cultivate warriors and fighters.

Several thousands of years ago, with the three sovereigns and five emperors age of the human race, the Formation Emperor Luoso along with several distinguished formation masters, constructed the first [Boundary canyon battlefield]. The reason it was created, was to prevent needless deaths but also at the same time, to imitate the most realistic and harsh killing battlefield against other races. To nurture and temper geniuses of the human race, only through doing this could the frail human race continue to survive on in this cruel and harsh world...

And after this, undergoing countless improvements and developments, the [Boundary Canyon battlefield] began to become more and more commonplace in different territories of the human race. Different sects, families, academies, placed their talented members to grow and train within.

Nowadays, many inner conflicts between the human race, such as disputes, competitions and battles would be fought within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

The ten academies of the Snow country, would have a grand competition between themselves every year.

Such a competition, would often be held in the jointly established [Boundary canyon battlefields]. The students that entered into this battlefield, would face the most primitive and challenging struggles. This was the most realistic battleground but also the most brutal. In a rapidly changing situation, you must make the most correct decision to obtain the final victory.

These information, was read in a scroll within the library by Ye Qingyu. He was extremely piqued by this information, so he had seriously investigated on.

On some level, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was an important landmark of the runes and formations of the human race. Many powerful experts of the land had undergone the baptism and tempering of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and walked out from this battleground to become what they would become.

Ye Qingyu had previously seen the scenes of provocation of the Azure Phoenix students and had also stepped in to discipline them. From the situation right now, it seems that the arrogance and superiority of these youths that came from far away, had finally angered the entire White Deer academy. A grand competition filled with the smell of gunpowder would finally begin.

“If I am able to obtain a place to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield], then this is naturally a good thing. From the rumours, the battlegrounds has a very different environment to the outside world, there are some spiritual herbs and precious medicine, and also some rare

demonic beasts, with the possibility of obtaining valuable talent bones...”

Ye Qingyu pondered in his heart.

But this grand competition, was something that concerned the entire academy and not just the individual years. So the final right to decide the list of participants, should be in the hands of the true higher ups of the academy, and this privilege was extremely valuable and not easy to obtain.

If it was before, Ye Qingyu’s battle strength was already number one in the entire first year. He could therefore possess a position within first year, but the problem was, he was now currently a second year yet he had not proven himself within the sophomore class...

After mulling it over, Ye Qingyu finally decided to try and obtain a place.

He went to find the head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan.

When he knocked to enter, he discovered the number one goddess of the White Deer academy, Bai Yuqing was also within. The two people seemed to be in the midst of discussion about something.

Ye Qingyu hesitated seeing Bai Yuqing, then told them the intentions of his coming clearly, from start to finish.

“This matter, I know.” Wang Yan nodded her head, not confirming or denying his request.

Ye Qingyu said his thanks, and turned to leave.

In this entire process, Bai Yuqing wore a white dress and sat silently like a blooming narcissus. She reclined in a huge bay by the window's edge, quietly observing Ye Qingyu, until he had left.

After seeing Ye Qingyu off, Wang Yan turned her back and said with a smile: "So what about it, do you still maintain your evaluation that you made previously?"

Bai Yuqing stood up, her exquisite body having a curve that would make someone's heart beat faster. She casually flicked her hair, saying: "I would not have thought that he has already obtained and refined a Spirit weapon. Fine, if it is like this, then I feel he has the requirements to enter the list."

Wang Yan began laughing loudly.

"Yuqing, do you know what attribute that I most admire in you?" The head teacher said with an obvious merriment.

The corner of Bai Yuqing's lips elegantly quirked up. "Could it be because I am more beautiful than you?"

"Within the noble students in these years, you are the only genius who is able to resolutely hold onto your principles. Even though you are biased towards the Ye Qingyu who came from a common background, you will not make a wrong judgement because of this bias." The smile

from Wang Yan's face gradually disappeared, shaking her head and sighing. "In these years, noble students like you, are becoming less and less."

"This has nothing to do with being a noble student." Bai Yuqing said in a confident tone. "This is the conviction and integrity of a martial artist."

Wang Yan looked at this beautiful and proud girl, not saying anything more.

Honour was becoming less and less. The glory of the kingdom was growing thin. The honour of martial artists, who knew when, had gradually began to disappear. In this cold and realistic world, this beautiful and prideful girl, had chosen values that were ancient and classical. Was she fortunate or unfortunate?

.....

As for Wang Yan's answer, Ye Qingyu did not know whether she had accepted or rejected Ye Qingyu's proposal.

As he pondered this carefully, he unwitting arrived into the second year area.

The dormitory environment was evidently better when compared to first years. No longer was dormitories shared, but rather everyone had a single area by themselves, with a courtyard. The living facilities were also far more complete, since there was a extremely harsh end of the year assessment. By the end of the academic year, not every student was able

to advance a year.

The failure rate was around half.

Therefore when compared to the first year, the second year's numbers was a lot lower. Everyone who were able to pass the end of year assessment were all little geniuses. The conditions of the dormitory being better, was also something to be expected and within normal reasoning.

Ye Qingyu had jumped a year so the arranged dormitory was at the area further back.

Using the nameplate to open the door, he entered, but as he did so, he was taken aback.

After emitting a cold shudder, his first reaction was to run out from the door. His expression was slightly panicked, as if a rabbit seeing a cat in front of him.

But a humongous suction came, dragging Ye Qingyu through the air backwards.

“Save me! Murder!...Sexual harassment.....”Demon king Ye screamed hoarsely through his throat, flustered and discomfited. His hands and legs flailed madly through the air, struggling madly but it was of no use.

“Sexual harassment is it?” A familiar and cold voice said.

Ka-dong.

The door was locked.

After, strange sounds appeared from within the room, as if someone was held down and wildly beaten. Between these sounds, were curses and insults and then even more loud beatings. PingPingPing, came the sounds of the impact of the punches....

A while later.

The sounds of impact finally quietened down.

The door of the courtyard opened.

A tall skinny middle aged teacher with his eyes squinted, rubbed his hands and left the courtyard. On his face was a satisfied grin, shaking his sleeves and departing...

Inside the door.

Ye Qingyu was twitching on the floor, his entire body filled with lumps.

“His mother, that old bastard was really too cruel this time...”The corner of Ye Qingyu’s lips was in a straight line. Previously within the Grievance hall, his injuries had all been external injuries but this time Ye Qingyu felt as if his organs and bone, were about to be broken into pieces by that old bastard.

That old bastard was undoubtedly a teacher at the Grievance hall, why would he appear here?

In the first instant of seeing him, Ye Qingyu knew that he was finished and needed to endure a beating. When he wanted to flee, he was completely suppressed by the other party, being dragged back in an instant.

The strength of the old bastard, was unfathomably deep.

Also, even if he was beaten to death the next time, he could not call the old bastard skinny next time.

Ye Qingyu clearly remember, when he was being fiercely beaten and not being able to retaliate, his mouth had acted up again. He unintentionally insulted the old fool as a 'skinny monkey'; the result was that this old guy was suddenly upset, as if he had gone crazy. He increased the severity, beating fiercely without pausing at all, until Ye Qingyu was crying for his father and shouting for his mother.

“Why does this old guy hate the term skinny monkey so much?”

Ye Qingyu activated his inner yuan, crawling from the ground and wondering in his heart.

His martial body was automatically triggered and inner yuan flowed throughout his body, treating his areas of injuries. The same as before, there were many strange and mysterious impurities, through this process

of recovery, that were expelled out of his body.

This made Ye Qingyu himself slightly astonished.

After reaching the peak of the ordinary martial stage, he had thought his body had already been tempered and refined to the extremes, with no speck left untouched. But who would have thought, that there would still be so many impurities. When that old thing had beat him, although he was cruel and harsh but he seemed to use a special technique, and caused the impurities in his body, to be forced out by the repeated impacts!

Chapter 066 – The Second Booklet

“This old guy, is he a pervert? Although he is doing me a favour, but who can withstand being tortured like this everyday?”

After using his qi to heal his injuries, he silently cursed in his heart.

He returned to his own room, and was about to rest when he suddenly saw in the middle of the stone table, there was a blue little booklet. It should not be something that came along with the dormitory, this was...

“Could it be something that was left behind by that old guy?”

Ye Qingyu wondered what it was.

The little booklet did not have a label, and seemed to be a thin journal that was handwritten. The writing on it was slightly disarrayed, covered with tiny characters. Occasionally there would be some diagrams of the human body scrawled into a mess. Only through severe concentration could one make out what was written.

Ye Qingyu flicked through several pages, slowly realising that it should be a cultivation recording regarding how to consolidate more yuan qi kindlings for further Spirit springs.

Regarding the information and mantra, Ye Qingyu had actually researched a lot about this topic in the public libraries. He had already achieved a basic understanding into this subject so he had already

decided to attempt to excavate the second Spirit spring within the next few days.

But the technique within this booklet, was far more profound and complete than what he had gleamed from the libraries. Especially some eccentric teachings contained within, it seemed that it went against common sense and was something that Ye Qingyu had never considered before. But with his insight and perception, after scrutinising it and visualising it, he knew that these techniques were absolutely possible. Moreover it would lead to a better result with less effort. It was a brilliant method.

“If I follow the method outlined in this book to train, the speed will increase considerably!”

Ye Qingyu read over this booklet several times in detail, confirming that the information contained within was valid. He decided to follow the method outlined by the booklet as the cultivation method he would use to excavate his second Spirit spring.

At this time, the sun was already gradually setting in the west.

Ye Qingyu went to the canteen for dinner and on the way there, he did not bump into any familiar faces. Everyone was second year students, and he completely did not recognise any of them and simply returned back to his living quarters, training in confinement.

Within the little courtyard.

“The first Spirit spring has already been excavated but the second Spirit spring is by far not enough. Within the Spirit spring stage, I must make preparations for future success. I must construct a stable foundation for my martial path while I am in this stage.”

Ye Qingyu had a determined will.

His inner yuan activated, the surrounding air currents changed and yuan qi of Heaven and Earth began converging onto his body.

Following the instructions in the booklet, he stimulated his inner yuan. Strands upon strands of yuan qi entered into his body, following the meridians into his four limbs and bones, and in the end, arrived into the dantian world.

The dantian world in the human body, was endless and without boundary. This was the key attribute of the yuan qi martial path. Ye Qingyu could already observed within using inner vision the dantian vision so he chose to consolidate the second yuan qi kindling a hundred thousand miles away from the first Spirit spring.

A large amount of yuan qi of Heaven and Earth was being gathered.

Time passed minute by minute.

Because he had already had previous experience, this time consolidating a yuan qi kindling for Ye Qingyu, could be said to to drive a lightweight chariot on a familiar road.* Following the method in the booklet to consolidate yuan qi, his speed was even greater and the inner

yuan being refined was even purer.

.....

.....

The fact that Azure Phoenix academy and White Deer academy was going to open up the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and would undergo a grand competition, very quickly spread through the entire White Deer academy.

For the entire White Deer academy, this was undoubtedly a large affair.

In this time, the students of Azure phoenix academy were both arrogant and provocative. There had already been many students from various years that had been incited and were enraged. There were an unknown number of small scale private duels that had already occurred but the overall result was not positive. They were in an extremely poor state of affairs.

In reality, such a battle record was very normal.

Firstly, the rankings of Azure phoenix academy in the rankings of the ten academies was originally much higher than White Deer academy. They were also situated in a much more wealthy location, along with rich resources. They had a more advantageous area, so therefore talented people would be born in large numbers. The students that had come in this visit, were all children that were chosen from tens of thousands of people. In comparison, the retaliation of the White Deer student was

chaotic and disorganised. Even if they evidently knew they were not the opponents of the Azure phoenix students, they would still go onto the arena and challenge. Loss was a natural consequence.

Such a result had a significant impact on the morale of the students of White Deer academy.

And as the matter grew larger and larger, and this event spread throughout the other regions in Snow country, this would undoubtedly create an negative influence. It would cause the already steadily deteriorating White Deer academy to be placed into an even worse position, and only able to make progress with great difficulty.

Under such a scenario, an official competition using the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was decided.

In these two days within White Deer academy, there were unceasing discussion that was passed on from student to student.

The topic that caused the students to intensely speculate and debate, was naturally the choice of competitors for this grand competition. Many White Deer academy students hoped to wipe away their shame and disgrace with the [Boundary canyon battlefield] by winning one round. Who had the qualification to represent the academy and enter the battle, was a question that many people placed great importance on.

According to the rumours from both parties, there would be a total of five battles between the two academies within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. The specific rules was that the first four battles would be fought according to the years of the students and the last battle was that

the two academies would choose the students which had the best performance and make them fight the last battle.

In a moment, there were violent winds and scudding clouds.

Every student of every year, began guessing the strongest students in their year that would be chosen.

As it was said, battles using words was hard to determine but winner of fights are easily decided*. Who possessed real strength, this was basically evident through training, sparring and during cultivation. The five geniuses that would be chosen from each year, was already short listed.

Of course, everything would have an unusual occurrence.

What everyone was expectantly waiting for, was this unusual occurrence.

As time passed, there were even people who created betting platforms. They gambled on which people of every year would be able to enter the battlefield, gambled on which year had a greater chance of victory, gambled on which student would have the best performance in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], gambled on whether White Deer academy was able to win one round out of the five rounds, gambled...

Of course, there were very few people who placed their wager on the outcome of overall victory.

Even the most crazy self confident White Deer students, did not believe

that White Deer academy would be able to obtain the final victory in this grand competition. The difference between these two academies was too large, with the average level of strength different greatly.

This grand competition also disturbed the various forces and organisations within Deer city.

On the surface, the White Deer academy represented the glory of the entire Deer city and the entire Deer mountain range. No matter whether it was a commoner or a noble or a soldier in the city, they all hoped that White Deer academy would not lose too badly.

Hidden currents moved.

Various forces began acting.

The Azure phoenix students had been far too conceited. As the saying goes, the powerful dragon crossing the river must not oppress the local snake. In addition, the truly powerful dragon was the number one ranked academy in all the ten academies, Huining academy and not Azure Phoenix academy.

So therefore when facing a common enemy, the army within Deer city and the Deer mountain range all displayed a rare unity in opposition towards the same enemy. It was said that the army had already allocated several high class Spirit weapons and these weapons were in the midst of transport to be temporarily used by the White Deer academy. The city leader office and the noble organisation, were also willing to lend out their families' Spirit weapon...

Everything, was to be able to fiercely beat the people of Azure Phoenix.

Even if they were not able to obtain the overall victory, they needed to teach a memorable lesson to the people of Azure Phoenix academy.

In such a atmosphere, the White Deer academy was unprecedentedly bustling. Too many students had placed there attention on the matters concerning the grand competition, and the lessons of the academy had grinded to a stop. Even the teachers of the academy huddled in a group to discuss this competition, causing the students to become even more disinterested in training.

But Ye Qingyu remained alone within his living quarters all this while, training to his utmost efforts.

In reality, calling it solitary training would not be entirely correct.

Because everyday, as the sun was about to set, the old guy would appear at this time.

This entire process did not allow for any explanations as to why Ye Qingyu was beaten. No matter whether Ye Qingyu was begging or whether he was cursing, the final result was that he would be convulsing on the floor, his entire body filled with swollen lumps.

Ye Qingyu still could not understand, how he had manage to irritate this old fellow. Previously, within the Grievance hall, this old guy had also appeared inexplicably. They did not know each other at all from before...

Thankfully, his rate of training did not slow.

The second day, Ye Qingyu had finally managed to consolidate a yuan qi kindling and planted the second yuan qi kindling within the dantian world.

For him, this was a major breakthrough.

That day in the evening, after the old guy had appeared and gave Ye Qingyu another thorough beating, the Ye Qingyu who had just returned to his room, found another blue booklet...”

“Beginner’s [Boundary canyon battlefield] tactics analysis and exploration?”

Seeing the name of this booklet, Ye Qingyu’s eyes brightened.

The information that he obtained from the public libraries, was not detailed or comprehensive enough at all. Especially information concerning the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. It was extremely sketchy and did not go into deep details regarding this battlefield.

Ye Qingyu had also utilised the nameplate Wang Yan had given him to secretly enter the martial libraries of the third year and fourth year. He still could not find a satisfactory answer. Who would have thought today, in such a small booklet, the information would fall down from the sky in from of him.

Only through reading a few pages, Ye Qingyu was sure that this booklet absolutely came from the same hands as the previous booklet regarding cultivating yuan qi kindlings. No matter whether considering the writings or the diagrams, it was in disarray, covered with undecipherable handwriting that could barely be understood.

“Could it be something that old thing has left behind again ?”

Ye Qingyu silently guessed.

But he had never seen that old guy enter his room.

He pondered this in his heart, but very quickly, Ye Qingyu became completely immersed within the contents of this booklet. The contents of the little booklet describe and explained the [Boundary canyon battlefield] in such detail that apart from making Ye Qingyu gasp in shock, it also expanded his horizons.

He had never thought, that this [Boundary canyon battlefield] would be so incredible. No wonder it was the cradle that had trained and nurtured the human race for thousands of years, developing warriors, armies and even War Gods.

Finishing the last page, Ye Qingyu could judge that just this act of creation by the Emperor Luoso, was an integral part in allowing the human race to survive on, in the war of the thousand races.

Chapter 067 – Three Sovereigns And Five Emperors

In the blink of an eye, there was only one day till the grand competition.

The final list of White Deer academy students that would participate in the battlefield was announced on the stone mirrors of each year. What was also announced, was the list of Azure Phoenix students that would enter.

The two academies both chose from the entire four years of students. In total, twenty genius students would enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield and undergo the fierce battle within.

Ye Qingyu's name, appeared in the list of five of the first year of White Deer academy section.

It seemed like head teacher Wang Yan had in the end, accepted Ye Qingyu's request.

Even though Ye Qingyu had already entered second year already, this was only something that occurred during the last ten days. His strength had already received the widespread recognition of the public through the previous incidents so such a decision did not cause too big a debate.

Apart from Ye Qingyu, the people that were able to enter the first year list was Qin Wushuang, Song Qingluo, Song Xiaojun and Xia Houwu.

Of these four people, the selection of Xia Houwu caused some debate and discussion. After all, this noble student did not perform too well within the monthly examinations and had been completely dominated and suppressed by Ye Qingyu several times already, making his reputation fall to the very bottom.

But since this list had already been announced, it was obvious that the higher ups of the academy had already made their decision. Even if it was not justified, there was no way to change the list anymore.

What made many commoner students sigh in regret, was the fact that if Yan Xingtian had not disappeared, then he absolutely had the right to enter the list of five. At that time, he could definitely make the commoner students proud, it was a pity...

Apart from this, the list for the second, third and fourth year were also announced. The people selected were naturally the movers and shakers of their years, including people like Bai Yuqing, Jiang Xiaohan, Han Shanghu, Han Xiaofei...

Ye Qingyu stood under the stone mirror, carefully examining the list.

What made him slightly perplexed, was that in the third year list, he was able to see a name called Blue Sky.

“Blue Sky? It seems that’s the name of the young teacher leading our group during the first wilderness training...” Within Ye Qingyu’s mind, a sudden image of the young person with blue hair, having an unreliable grin on his face and was instantly a little confused.

Wasn't Blue Sky someone who was a teacher?

When did he suddenly become a third year student of White Deer academy?

Could it be that the higher ups of White Deer academy had cheated and mixed in some teachers with great strength into the student body, wanting to make a comeback and win a round at least? This did not seem too likely; Azure Phoenix students were not idiots, as long as they investigated they would easily be able to make things clear. If that fact that White Deer academy had cheated was spread out, this would become an bare and naked scandal.

This was really strange!

Ye Qingyu thought carefully, but temporarily could not think of an explanation.

But Blue Sky's terrifying strength had left a deep impression on Ye Qingyu. If he was to go out and fight during the third year battle, then White Deer academy must win?

In contrast to this, on the announced list of Azure Phoenix academy, Ye Qingyu only recognised one person. It was the person that he had met in the public library, staring at each other. That person was deeply imprinted within Ye Qingyu's memory. The young man called Xu Ge was very frightening.

And this Xu Ge, was only a first year representative of the Azure

Phoenix academy.

Looking at the names that he did not recognise nor understood, Ye Qingyu had a premonition, that this grand competition for White Deer academy, would be incomparably tough.

On the way back his living quarters, Ye Qingyu was stopped by a young teacher, bringing him towards the group battle preparation area.

“There’s such a thing as a group preparation battle area ? ”Ye Qingyu was slightly shocked.

“Fighting within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], is not the same as fighting in a normal battle. There are some preparations that must be done, especially for first year students who has never entered into such a battlefield before and doesn’t understand the situation. In a while there will be teachers specialising in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], that will explain and teach the way of how to fight, the terrain within and so on...”

The young teacher lead the way and patiently explained to Ye Qingyu.

In the time they were speaking, they had already passed through the second, third year areas and reached the centre of the fourth year area. Walking through a long waterside pavilion, the young teacher’s footsteps finally stopped, facing a large building in the centre of the lake.

“Enter, the teachers are waiting for you inside.”

The young teacher pointed to the entrance.

“You’re not going to enter?” ye Qingyu casually asked.

An envious and longing expression appeared on the face of the young teacher. “Right now, I don’t have the requirements to enter [Ascending heaven pavilion].”

Ye Qingyu was taken aback.

He lifted his head to look. Sure enough, above the large building at the centre of the lake, a blue board with golden characters was suspended imposingly. The three words, Ascending heaven pavilion, was as if written from the hands of a devil or a god. There was a loftiness that seemed as if it looked down upon the world, making a person vaguely feel, that as long as they entered this building, they could ascend into the blue skies.

“Thank you.”

Ye Qingyu said a word of thanks, then entered into the building.

In the instant he stepped past the entrance, the vision in front of him changed greatly. The lighting suddenly grew dim and what was in front of him, was floating stone statues of deities and underneath him was the floating stone tiles. From far away, there were the twinkling of the stars, as if he had appeared in the space of the universe...

An illusion ?

Or was it a small world created by formations?

Ye Qingyu continued to walk forward step by step and very quickly, he could see a massive rock plaza. As he followed the stone tiles and came to the plaza, he saw underneath a massive stone statue, there were tens of people. In the crowd were Song Xiaojun, Song Qingluo and the others, and also around ten old elders with snowy white hair and beards.

“You are the last one. Good, everyone has arrived now.” The voice of Wang Yan sounded out, the figure of the head teacher of the first years walking out, indicating that Ye Qingyu should stand with the crowd.

This should be the true higher ups of the academy and the elite that was about to participate in the grand competition?

Ye Qingyu estimated in his heart. Standing next to a Song Xiaojun that was stealthily waving at him, he did not say anything.

On the other side, was the number one genius of the first years, Qin Wushuang. Compared to his previous atmosphere of not showing joy nor anger on his face, after losing to Ye Qingyu, this noble young master had suddenly become a sword that was sharpened, emitting an overbearing and oppressive aura.

Ye Qingyu's gaze casually considered the people around him, then his eyes landed on the huge statue.

It was a hundred metre high sculpture of the Formation Emperor

Luoso. Vivid and lifelike, it towered majestically over the plaza, as if it was a mountain, giving people a stunned sensation as if bearing witness to a deity.

By the side, one of the higher ups had already begun lecturing in something. The majority of the students listened seriously. Clearly, such an opportunity, even for fourth year students was hard to obtain so even they were enthusiastic.

Within the crowd, only two people were distracted.

The blue haired Blue Sky, lazily reclined against the stone steps often yawning. He seemed to have no interest whatsoever in the words of the higher up lecturer, not disguising his boredom and inattention at all.

The elders of the White Deer academy, seemed to have already gotten used to such a sight. They did not even give a glance to this fellow who did not abide by the rules.

The other person who was distracted, was Ye Qingyu.

His attention, was placed on the sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso.

Looking at the statue, Ye Qingyu remembered the legends of the three Sovereigns and Five emperors.

It was a history that told the story of the suffering of their race, but it was also a story of an inspiring and tragic hero, and how he became this

hero.

Legend had it, that the human race came from a placed called the Blue Water domain --it was an extremely unnoticeable domain within the ten thousand domains. A very long time after the Blue Water domain was born, it was completely separated from the other domains. They had no natural enemies, and was on the top of the food chain, flourishing for a long time.

Afterwards, people unintentionally managed to break through to break through the edges of the Blue water domain and leave this domain. They found out that outside, there were even vaster and more mysterious domains, and came into contact with the Fiendgod race.

In this contact, the human race came with friendly intentions but what received them was an apocalyptic extinction and the fate of being enslaved. As the Blue Water domain started to grow and open its fangs, it entered into the world of the thousand domains that were ruled by the law of the jungle. The human race that ruled over all in the Blue Water domain, suddenly faced a unprecedented disaster that could drive their entire race into extinction.

The Blue Water domain became a purgatory hell that alien races held gluttonous feasts in.

And in the next few thousand years, the human race within the Blue Water domain, became one of the intelligent races that were sold as slaves. During this time, keeping human slaves became a type of fashion within the strong and noble races of other great domains. The human race were displaced from their homeland, their fate held in the hands of others. Suffering unimaginable torture and humiliation...

The human race was nearly driven to extinction.

This type of situation, only changed for the better along with the rise of a genius of the human race, called Luoso.

Formation Emperor Luoso.

This human genius that seemed to born from thin air, using incomparable talent and determination, combined the learnings of the human civilisation along with the martial path of the different races. He created the formation civilisation – a civilisation that could truly threaten the many different races.

Luoso's path of formation stunned everyone, even at the very beginning. Through his power alone, he slaughtered the invaders of the many different races in the Blue Water domain, regaining the Blue Water domain and shocking the other races.

Afterwards, experts of the human race began to rise. Within the human slaves that had drifted to the other domains, there were many people with extreme talent. After thousands upon thousands years of pain and suffering, it seemed that even fate could bear this no longer. Within a hundred years, the human races flourished and gushed geniuses, with several Supreme existences being born...

A variety of cultivation and battle techniques, gradually began to be created.

Through the harsh suffering, the human race had finally found a cultivation path suitable for their bodies. Battle was a hotbed that nourished the martial path. The average battle power of the human race increased explosively.

And it was rumoured in the age of the three Sovereigns and five Emperors, these eight Supreme existences that held up the Heavens, was born in this situation and became leaders of the human race. They battled with the alien races for over hundred of years, and finally in this cruel and cold domain, won the right to survive and reproduce. They managed to lay claim to their own space, no longer being sold as slaves...

Chapter 068 – The First Round

Formation Emperor Luoso, was one of the three Sovereigns.

After tens of thousands of years of suffering, the human race already had established a position within many of the different domains. Their living conditions were improved by countless times, with the freedom of their entire race. The legends regarding the three Sovereigns and the Five Emperors motivated generations and generations of human warriors, to defend the rights of their race.

The Heaven Wasteland domain that Snow country was situated in, belonged to one of the many civilisations that followed in the path of the formation civilisation. So therefore the worship of their martial ancestor, Formation Emperor Luoso, and being able to see the sculpture of the Formation emperor in the heart of the White Deer academy, was extremely normal.

But a sculpture that was so massive, was the first time that Ye Qingyu had witnessed.

Under the gaze of the Formation Emperor, Ye Qingyu felt that he was as minuscule as an ant.

And evidently in this gargantuan statue, there was a difference from the normal sculptures outside. A visible pale yellow aura lingered around it's entire body, as if there was a mysterious energy that Ye Qingyu had no way of sensing.

After staring at this sculpture for so long, a strange thing began to happen ——

Ye Qingyu's vision suddenly became blurred. There was a hard to suppress dizziness, and the facial features of the sculpture began to move like ripples, the eyes as if it was blinking.

It was as if in the next instant, the sculpture would be able to come life.

And at the same time, a sacred and solemnness emitted from the stature of the Formation Emperor. It spread throughout the entire space, causing people who could sense this feel the need to bow down and surrender in awe.

“Within this sculpture, there are some obscure meanings...”

Ye Qingyu was secretly dazed.

He did not know whether others had a similar sensation.

As he turned his head to observe the other people, he discovered that they were still in the midst of seriously listening to the lecture of the higher ups of the academy without any abnormal signs. It seemed that this sculpture of the Formation Emperor did not affect them in the slightest.

And at this time, Ye Qingyu abruptly felt a gaze that had always focused on his figure, filled with an invasiveness, brazenly evaluating him up and down.

He turned his head around and saw Blue Sky staring directly at him.

Seeing that Ye Qingyu had discovered him, Blue Sky did not turn his gaze away. Instead, he laughingly perked up his eyebrows, greeting him in his own special way.

Ye Qingyu hesitated, then returned with a smile.

He remembered that Wen Wan had once said, when Liu Yuanchang of the government office had suspected him of killing Liu Lei and was about to capture him, it was this Blue Sky who had unreasonably beaten, forcefully protecting himself.

Even though he did not understand why Blue Sky would help him, but Ye Qingyu appreciated and was grateful towards this uninhibited and rebellious young man.

“Fine, the things that need to be said has been said.”The final summary of the old Dean was said, his voice becoming much louder. “I believe that everyone has already chosen a Spirit weapon that you are satisfied with. Even though this is a temporary loan, but for you there are definite benefits. As long as you assimilate it with care, even though you have only used it for several days, it will be a great aid in helping to raise your strength....”

“I’ve long prepared ! ”

“This time I will definitely give the people of Azure Phoenix a lesson ! ”

“Haha, with the 【Raging Flame Roulette】, I can directly face martial artists with ten Spirit springs. Hmph, I will definitely give a fierce lesson to that Azure Phoenix student Lin Baiyi!”

“The [Ice cold heart sword] has given me a very large inspiration, I have broken through again in these two days!”

The students in high morale all displayed their emotions, showing an absolute confidence.

Ye Qingyu could sense the inexplicable confidence of these people, as if they had found the winning tactic that they could use to gain victory against the Azure Phoenix students. He realised, that the various rumours were real. The White Deer academy had really ‘borrowed’ many Spirit weapons, and distributed it within the hands of the geniuses entering the grand competition...

But the problem was, as one of the participants, why did he not receive any Spirit weapons?

As Ye Qingyu was wondering, a thought appeared in his heart. His eyes was able to catch Qin Wushuang’s gaze filled with contempt and disdain.

“There are several students who did not manage to obtain a Spirit weapon. This is as when the army lent several Spirit weapons to us, on the way of transport, a small problem appeared. The academy has already sent four elders to go collect it, before tomorrow’s battle, it should be able to reach your hands...”

The head teacher of the first year, as if she suddenly realising something, looked at Ye Qingyu and the others.

Ye Qingyu gaze was able to notice, when hearing such an explanation, there were several people who emitted out a breath of relief. They displayed an expression of unloading a heavy weight from their shoulders. They should be the people who did not manage to receive a Spirit weapon.

Only Blue Sky were lazily leaning to one side, letting out a short laugh.

“From now on till the start of the grand competition, all the competitors will stay here. There are specialist teachers and elders here that can solve your problems, whether it be it regarding cultivation or the [Boundary canyon battlefield], you can ask anytime...” The old Dean said with a wide smile.

A cheer was let out from the students instantly.

To be able to reach the personal teachings of people like these elders, was a chance that was hard to come by. Especially the elders that had appeared, were experts that was famous within Deer city. Normally, they rarely appeared within the academy, how could the students not be excited?

Ye Qingyu's heart was moved.

He also had some small problems regarding cultivation, that needed

some guidance.

But he did not think, that the situation was completely different from his imagination. --

After consecutively asking two or three old teachers, either their response was bland or their answers was pretty much the same as those from books, without any new insights. He attempted to tell them of the things that he had gleamed from the two booklets, to confirm that it was real, but the result obtained was a scolding...

“You have already gone against the established rules ! ”A old elder said with a angry glare.

“But...” Ye Qingyu still wanted to say something.

“This child cannot be taught.” This old elder closed his eyes and waved his hands, the very picture of someone who would not speak anymore.

Ye Qingyu could only give up.

.....

.....

At the same time.

In the guest area of White Deer academy.

The Azure Phoenix academy's living quarters.

“The people of White Deer is really laughable. They’ve really gone and borrowed Spirit weapons. Haha, have they become crazy from wanting to win so much?”

“What’s the use of having a Spirit weapon? Can they be compared to the Azure Phoenix even then? Haha, I’ve already completely assimilated my Spirit weapon a year ago, the people of White Deer academy is really too poor...”

“We cannot underestimate them too much. It is said that in these past years, the White Deer academy has recruited several geniuses that we need to pay attention to, such as that Bai Yuqing. Her strength cannot be ignored. We cannot have blind confidence, to prevent capsizing in the shallows!”

“Oh, that’s right, that Blue Sky...”

“We are better off not provoking that fellow. He is a person that can make the number one genius of the ten academies Dan Chenzi have a headache...However, with his power alone, he cannot change the final outcome!”

“I really don’t understand, why that monster Blue Sky, would enter the White Deer academy?”

“Eh, Junior brother Xu, why are you not speaking? Are you thinking of something?”

“Yes, I’ve thought of a person that perhaps can be a slight hindrance to us.” Xu Ge snapped out of his daze, retelling the story of his meeting with a White Deer academy student in the public library. “That person is strong, I can sense it. He seems to be called Ye Qingyu...”

“Ye Qingyu? Haha, interesting. In the previous days some people of White Deer academy secretly contacted me. They ask me to pay special attention to several people, with one called Ye Qingyu who is on this list...”

“The people of White Deer academy has contacted senior brother Yin?”

“Yes, they are really a bunch of schemers and plotters. A grand competition that involves the honour and glory of their entire academy, and these so called geniuses, rather than uniting, instead conspires against each other...Haha, really a pitiful group of people!”

“If this really continues on, sooner or later White Deer academy will be finished!”

“That’s right, senior brother Gong, why can’t we see Elder Chen and the others in these days?”

“Elder Chen has an important matter to take care of, there is no need to worry. Just prepare well for the grand competition. I hope for no careless mistakes to be made, otherwise when Elder Chen’s rage is upon us, no

one can escape the blame.”

“We will follow your orders, senior brother Gong!”

.....

.....

The morning sun rose.

In the centre of the practice grounds of every year group, it was packed with a sea of people. Especially in the area in front of the stone mirror, it was completely full and brimming with students. Countless gazes focused upon the stone mirrors.

“Has the grand competition started ? ”

“Soon, Soon ! ”

“Who’s fighting in the first round ? ”

“I’ve heard that it follows the yearly classification, the first round should be between the fourth years of the two academies!”

“Can we possibly win ? ”

“I don’t know, senior sister Bai, senior brother Han, their strength is

unfathomable, they have a chance of winning.”

The crowd gathered together, discussing and chattering.

On the stone mirror, although they could not witness with their own eyes the happenings within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], but the mirror would continuously announce in real time the accomplishments of both parties, the contrast of power between both sides, individual accomplishments, battle losses, kill scores and death scores and more....

Through these statistics, one could judge the situation within the battlefield, and determine which side held an advantage and which side was about to face defeat!

Suddenly——

A loud sound of a bell resounded throughout the entire campus.

The emotions of everyone became excited and heated.

“It has finally started ! ”

“The first round will start!”

“Both parties need to enter the battlefield?”

“The names are displayed.....The blue names are White Deer academy,

the red names are the Azure Phoenix students...Quickly, look, the names of senior sister Bai Yuqing, senior brother Han Xiaofei, senior brother Han Shuangfu, senior sister Jiang Xiaohan, senior brother Li Mingxin names are indicated...”

“This is too exciting, the battle is about to begin!.....”

“It seems that at the moment, both parties have not acted against each other yet”

“I’ve heard that within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], everyone’s strength will be suppressed to the same level by the law of this realm?”

“I don’t know, I’ve never entered ! ”

“Eh ? What’s happened ? Senior brother Li Mingxinj’s name has suddenly lighted up... ..”

“Not good, he is under ambush! ! ”

“His name is erased.....”

“Senior brother Li Mingxin has died!”

“So quick ! ”

“This is too fast, could it be that Azure Phoenix academy is really that

amazing? You have to realise that senior brother Li Mingxin has a title called [Palm sword absolute], in the previous internal grand competitions, he has rarely met an opponent...”

“Eh.....what ? Quickly look, the name of Li Mingxin’s name has brightened up again, could it be.... ..”

“I’ve heard that within the [Boundary canyon battlefield, everyone has three chances to resurrect. If you are killed in a row three times, then you will directly be transferred away from the battlefield, departing from this battle.....”

Chapter 069 – The First Kill

“So there’s still a chance?”

“Let’s first wait and see ! ”

Everyone clustered in front of the stone mirror anxiously. Especially when a name brightened, they would stop breathing, afraid of missing anything.

“This is terrible. Senior brother Li Mingxin’s name has flashed again... it’s extinguished...this is his second resurrection?”

“From the beginning until now, the names of the people of Azure Phoenix academy, has not even flashed once!”

“The name of senior brother Han Xiaofei has also been extinguished

“The bright red light has greatly surged, they have already taken over sixty percent of the territory...The White Deer academy is at an absolute disadvantage, this will be terrible if this goes on...”

“Senior brother Li Mingxin’s name has been extinguished again...this time he will have to completely withdraw from the battle!”

“Senior brother Han Xiaofei’s name, has also been extinguished three

times. He has been transferred away from the battlefield!”

“How can it be like this? The people of Azure Phoenix academy, has not even had their names extinguished even once!”

“The name of senior sister’s Jiang Xiaohan, has been extinguished twice!”

“The name of senior brother Han Shuangfu has been extinguished once!

“Only senior sister Bai Yuqing’s name remains completely intact.”

“We have only three people left, the chance of victory is remote...”

“This is dreadful, our first line of defence the protector stature has fallen. The Azure Phoenix group is currently attacking our second line of defence, with signs that it can fall at any second!”

“If there cannot be a meaningful and effective counter attack, we will lose for sure this round!”

Time passed second by second.

Everyone’s heart became worried and anxious. The tide of the battle gradually shifted to one side, making everyone standing on the side of the White Deer academy hearts to hang in suspense. If they lost so decisively in the first round, then this would not bode well for the later

battles.

Could it be that the Azure Phoenix academy was impossible to win against?

Could it be that the difference between the two great academies, was really so large?

Everyone was fretful and impatient as ants on a hot wok.

“Quickly look...” Someone suddenly cheered. “Liu Ye of Azure Phoenix academy’s name has flashed...its about to be extinguished...”

Everyone seeing this, began to be animated again.

There would finally be an Azure Phoenix student that would be killed.

This was really too great, they had waited for this moment for so long. Even if they only killed one person, at least it would vent some of their anger, at least they would look better than if they were shaved completely bald.

But very quickly, the excitement and enthusiasm was mercilessly doused with a bucket of cold water.

The name of Liu Ye, after a brief period of intense flickering, did not extinguish.

And at the same time, the names of Han Shuangfu and Jiang Xiaohan of White Deer academy, were completely erased.

“This.....”Within the hearts of everyone, an icy cold sensation spread.

“This is fine, the name of senior sister Bai Yuqing has not even been extinguished once...In the end, she has protected and defended the last honour and glory of our White Deer academy

Before his sentence had finished.

The name of Bai Yuqing, also extinguished.

No one spoke.

A deathly silence.

.....

.....

Within the Boundary canyon battlefield.

The murderous screams were like boiling tar.

The corpses of Han Shuangfu and Jiang Xiaohan lay under the protector statue that had lost its ability to attack, and was in collapse and

ruins.

The five people of Azure Phoenix academy surrounded from all sides. A sword was stabbed through Bai Yuqing's abdomen, fresh blood dripping down. Her tight fitting white battle dress was dyed red, withering like a white rose, her figure slowly crumbling...

What made the proud goddess's heart fill with icy despair, was not her injuries but the strength of Azure Phoenix academy.

Seeing the momentum of the White Deer academy was gone completely, Bai Yuqing together with Han Shuangfu, Jiang Xiaohan, wanted to rely on the power of numbers to kill a member of Azure Phoenix academy. That way, they could at least obtain a kill...

This was an ambush that had been long planned.

They also borrowed the attacking force of the protector statue, hoping to succeed in one strike. Although the situation was unsalvageable, but at least they could win back a shred of face.

Who would have guessed.....

The three person ambush were not able to kill Liu Ye, and conversely, the rapid reinforcements of the four people of Azure Phoenix academy came to kill them. Jiang Xiaohan and Han Shuangfu was slaughtered in the blink of eye, and she herself was heavily injured....

Bai Yuqing looked at the approaching Azure Phoenix academy, their

expressions filled with cold sneers. She did not hesitate in the slightest, her long sword slashing, cutting her swan like neck across the throat, blood spurting out...

.....

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The faces of the people of White Deer academy were ashen.

The four people who were forcefully ejected from the battlefield, Li Mingxin, Han Xiaofei, Jiang Xiaohan, Han Shuangfu all had their heads held down, tightly clenching their fists. Their complexion were embarrassed, not even daring to utter a single word.

On the space above the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso, a gigantic projection was clearly visible.

Within the projection, was namely everything that happened within [Boundary canyon battlefield].

After the four people were forcefully ejected, the White Deer academy only had Bai Yuqing left to bitterly defend – but such a defence, was like the fight of a caged beast.

Vast numbers of the Azure Phoenix demon rune soldiers had already

destroyed the three layers of defence of White Deer academy. Under the direction of the five students of Azure Phoenix students, the total collapse of White Deer academy was only a matter of time.

Bai Yuqing did her utmost to resist, one against five. This could only lengthen the time till defeat by a little.

When battle had already reached such a point, in reality they should have directly surrendered.

But Bai Yuqing bitterly endured. Only after being killed in battle three times, and was expelled from the [Boundary canyon battlefield], did the battle end. The headquarters of White Deer academy loudly collapsed. The first battle had ended.

White Deer academy had lost.

Completely and utterly lost.

Silent people gathered in front of the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso. On the student representatives, there were both shock and unwilling to accept this reality. They could not accept that the first battle was finished in such a humiliating manner, shocked at the powerful strength of the Azure Phoenix students.

Han Shuanghu and Bai Yuqing, were known as the strongest within all the students of White Deer academy. They had the support of strong Spirit weapons, and possessed unique battle techniques. Within the eyes of the White Deer academy students, they were an existence they could

never win against.

But even those two people, could not even obtain one single kill.

The people of Azure Phoenix academy, were they not too strong?

The White Deer academy students that originally had utter confidence in themselves, at this instant, felt a wave of coldness pass through them. The next three rounds, it was most likely already determined.

.....

Outside.

“We’ve lost.....sigh, we’ve lost just like that!”

“Disgrace, not one single person has died from Azure Phoenix academy. This is complete domination. Could there really be such a great difference between the two academies?”

“Aaaaa, I even felt that my talent was not bad, and my strength was close to those people. I also thoughts that afterwards, in this great wide world, there is no place I cannot go, but the result it...So our White Deer academy is so weak. I really am filled with foolish conceit, a frog at the bottom of a well!”

“This is really too embarrassing ! ”

“The people known as the five strongest among the fourth year, lost so tragically. Hmph, they should have causally chosen a few people to enter, since the result will be defeat anyway!”

In the practice grounds of the first years to the fourth years, people were still tightly clustered in front of the stone mirror. After cries of shock and distress, such a result were like cruel slaps on their face, a fiery stinging pain being felt.

They could accept losing.

But losing to such an extent, was enough to make someone breakdown.

The morale collapsed like an avalanche.

At the same time, the news spread out rapidly throughout the entire Deer city. A dusky cloud covered and enveloped the entire city, the oppressive atmosphere making people feel incomparably stifled. They could only let out a low sigh.

One gained glory, the other lost it.

The White Deer academy was the face of the entire Deer mountain range and area. If such a tragic loss was spread out, the nobilities would be laughed at for numerous days by the people of the other regions.

.....

Ascending Heaven pavilion.

“Start the second round.”

The old Dean had no expression whatsoever. No one could tell what he was thinking in his heart.

Above the Formation Emperor sculpture, a second later, five beams of light shot out. It shined on the five representatives of the third years. After the light had disappeared, the figures of these five people were also gone, being transferred within the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

There was total silence.

.....

In front of each stone mirror.

“The second round has started.....”

“Sigh, I estimate that there is no hope anymore.....”

“This difference is too large ! ”

“I only hope it is not complete domination.....”

“It would be great if they could obtain a kill, even if only just once!”

The White Deer academy students morale had fallen so low that they were nearly about to directly kneel and pray. They had always thought they were the favoured children of Heaven. Within Deer city, as long as they mentioned they were White Deer academy students, they would possess a superiority, and would be known as nobles who did not have a title of nobility.

If they completely lost in this grand competition, from now on there would be not one person who could walk around Deer city with their head held high.

The information and figures of the second round appeared on the stone mirror.

This time the White Deer academy was the red party, and the five students represented the demon race. And therefore, the Azure Phoenix students were the blue party, commanding the human army.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], both parties had a choice of several powers. There were various race patterns they could choose, such as the Ghost race, Beast race, Demon race, Human race and even the Devil race or Divine race.

But within today's Heaven Wasteland domain, the influence of both the human race and the demon race was the largest. Their relationship were also extremely tense. So therefore, within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they would often chose a mode that fought between the human race and the demon race. This would allow martial artists from a young age, to familiarise themselves with the human military and the

army of the demon race, knowing the method of battle, habits, powers and special attributes, completely grasping it. When they fought in a later battle, they would not be at a disadvantage from inexperience.

“The battle has begun!”

“I’m too nervous, I don’t dare look!”

“Someone’s name has flashed...it’s a name from Azure Phoenix, the one flashing is really a person from Azure Phoenix academy...Eh? It’s extinguished.” Someone suddenly shouted in shock.

“He Ying of Azure Phoenix academy’s name has been extinguished, it’s really extinguished!”

“What’s happening? Could my eyes be mistaken?”

“It’s true, someone has really died in battle from the Azure Phoenix academy! Everyone quickly look, can you confirm, could it be that my eyes are not functioning?”

“Who killing He Ying? Their speed is too quick!”

The White Deer academy students were originally so nervous, they were in a death like state. They were gathered in front of the stone mirror and was in an apprehensive mood. The sudden explosive news, in an instant, caused the crowd to erupt in applause and cheers. The group of people was like a handful of salt scattered on a hot pot of oil, completely bubbling and fizzing!

Chapter 070 – Five Consecutive Kills

In the direction of the White Deer academy practice grounds, screams and cheers could be heard.

The sounds of the cheers throughout the academy, even transmitting along to the guest area of the academy, the living quarters of the Azure Phoenix academy. These sound waves were like a provocation, becoming louder and louder, louder and louder, about to envelop the entire city.

“Hmph, a bunch of people that have not seen the world. They have only obtained a kill, what is there to be happy about...”

“In the previous round, we killed them like dogs, and they still cheer even now!”

“Ai, you have to understand the pitiful folks in a decaying academy, and their pathetic and fragile self esteem....”

“Hmph, I really can’t get used to those people. Even those so called nobles, every single one of them is filled with a poor and lowly aura, as if they are rocks in a mud pit...”

Within the guest area, the students of Azure Phoenix discussed these events with an arrogant disdain. They had a noble and lofty attitude that came from originating from the centre of one of the most wealthiest districts. From their perspective, not even a trace of cheers should be heard.

“Senior brother He Ying has died in battle?”

“I can’t endure this anymore, I need to go out and have look!”

“That’s right, when they completely lose, we can personally make these scrubby people shut up!”

A suggestion was made, then tens of students replied enthusiastically. They left the area, heading towards the centre of the first year practice grounds.

This time the visiting group from Azure Phoenix had over a hundred people, elites from every year. But only twenty people received the right to participate in the [Boundary canyon battlefield], and the others were all restless from waiting.

.....

“It’s senior brother Blue Sky who killed He Ying!”

“Sure enough, the first person to receive a kill, is senior brother Blue Sky!”

On the stone mirror, after the name of White Deer academy’s Blue Sky, there was a kill mark. This represented the fact that he had manage to kill an opponent within the battlefield.

“Senior brother Blue Sky? This name is slightly familiar, so who is he?”

“Why have I never seen or heard of this person called Blue Sky in my three years here at the academy? He seems to appear rarely.”

“Hush, lower your voice! Blue Sky is that perverted fiend! ! ”

“What ? So he was the lecher that made things in total chaos a while back? His strength was so high?”

“That’s right, it’s him. It’s said that he is a complete thorn in the teacher’s side. Out of ten days, there are nine days where he is confined...”

“That severe ? ”

“According to the rumours, this Blue Sky is not originally part of Deer city. Only during his second year, did he abruptly came to the White Deer academy?”

“Who knows.”

The grounds was filled with chatter.

Students who knew a little about the background of Blue Sky, through a few words, exposed some juicy titbits. The majority of the surrounding people were clueless about him, and became interested. When did White

Deer academy have such a freak?

In the time of their speech, the contents of the stone mirror changed again.

“It flashed, it flashed, another name has been extinguished...Xu Yizhu of Azure Phoenix’s name has dimmed.” People began laughing with mirth and triumph.

On the stone mirror, another person of Azure Phoenix had died in battle.

At the same time, the number of kills Blue Sky had was now two.

“It’s Blue Sky again...This ...is too fearsome, it’s really too amazing! I can feel hope for this round again!”

“From now on, this Blue Sky is my idol, I will bow down to him whenever I see him!”

The crowd began heating up.

Compared to the complete domination of the fourth years, no one thought that the third year would create such an unbelievable situation. In less than fifteen minutes, Blue Sky had already killed two people consecutively, instantly making people able to see some hope.

But very quickly, as if this was the response to this valiant feat, the

names of the White Deer academy's students, began to dim.

Lu Lin died in battle!

Qin Yun died in battle!

Zhu Gui died in battle!

Three White Deer students were consecutively killed within the battlefield. What awaited them was resurrection fifteen minutes later, and a second opportunity to battle.

Some peoples' heart, was abruptly depressed again.

“Quickly look,. There's another new change...Chang Jun of Azure Phoenix has perished, he's died. Haha, he's really died...behind senior brother Blue Sky, he has three kills.”

“Is he able to turn this desperate crisis around? Senior brother Blue Sky, you must by all means withstand this!”

“Heavens, quickly look, he's killed another one!Mo Daoyan of Azure Phoenix has been killed! ! ”

“The kill score of senior brother Blue Sky is now four ! ”

“The crux of this battle will depend of senior brother Blue Sky!”

“Ah.....our side, has lost another four people...Sigh, it's hard for senior brother Blue Sky alone to reverse a desperate situation. The people of Azure Phoenix, in terms of kill score and number of members left, has already gained a huge advantage!”

“Not good, the name of senior brother Blue Sky is flickering...He is suffering an concerted attack!”

“Thankfully he has not died yet.....”

“He's died, Dai Zhide has died! Haha, the strongest of Azure Phoenix has died. He has previously obtained seven kills and now he is dead...it must be the actions of senior brother Blue Sky...the kill score of senior brother Blue Sky has become five!”

“Haha, delightful! Kill the five representatives of Azure Phoenix academy, slaughter them all!”

The blood of the crowd began boiling.

At this time, no matter who it was, to be able to win back some face for White Deer academy, they would become a hero. Even though previously before this battle, Blue Sky had a somewhat bad reputation. But at this instant, he became an existence that numerous people placed their hopes on.

But the next moment, many people were dumbfounded.

“Blue Sky has left the battlefield ! ”

On the stone mirror, these six words appeared.

At this time, many people became stunned.

What happened?

Why had he suddenly left the battlefield?

Was he not about to turn a desperate situation around?

.....

“You.....why did you do this ? ”

Within the Ascending Heaven pavilion, a golden light flashed, and a youth was transferred out. His face scarlet with rage, he rushed to question Blue Sky: “Why did you leave? If you did not retreat, we definitely could have withstood another hour...you did this on purpose!”

Golden lights continued to flash.

The three other people of the third year, were also expelled out.

They had already died in battle consecutively three times, and exhausted all their resurrection opportunities. They were forcefully

rejected from the battlefield...

“Blue Sky, you need to make an explanation for yourself! ! ”

“We trusted in you so much, but you didn’t even give us a notification, and retreated alone...you...are you worthy of us?”

“That’s right, we are a team, you would really abandon us...”

These people furiously interrogated Blue Sky.

Blue Sky leaned against a floating stone statue, having a lazy smile on the corner of his lips. He yawned, a perfect picture of ‘your father I is too lazy to explain’.

“Blue Sky, you should say something...” An old teacher also opened his mouth.

Blue Sky gave this old teacher a glare, and coldly snorted.

He turned his head, his gaze suddenly falling upon Ye Qingyu. He laughed mischievously: “Little fellow, let me tell you a little joke. Four stupid pigs with ulterior motives, once they entered into the battlefield rushed near the wild area to kill Spirit beasts and Demonic beasts, doing their utmost to harvest Spirit herbs and rare medicines. When they saw the people of Azure Phoenix, they ran like dogs with tails behinds their legs, and they have no shame, to dare mention the word ‘Team’. Do you think this is laughable or not?”

Ye Qingyu did not speak.

In reality, on the formation projection above the sculpture, everyone had clearly witnessed what had occurred. These four third year students had been really shameless, without the slightest hint of a will to do battle. Conversely, they did their utmost to reap the benefits from the battlefield, purely trying to survive, without the slightest hint of honour.

“How about it? Is this joke not funny?” Seeing that Ye Qingyu had no reaction, Blue Sky again jokingly said: “Then let me tell another. There’s another person that is even more retarded and shameless than these four people, and is yet he is still a teacher. He evidently witnessed everything that had happened, and yet asked someone like me, a great contributor with five consecutive kills to explain myself. Do you think this person is a shameless old bastard or not?”

The colours of everyone’s face changed.

If the previous words were just insulting and offensive to his four team mates, then this was acceptable. But this time he indirectly insulted the teacher that had previously spoken, this was complete disobedience and impertinence, reckless and extreme daring.

Shoot!

Veins appeared on Ye Qingyu’s forehead.

“Hey, who are you? I don’t recognise you, why are you telling jokes to

me, we are not familiar at all...” Ye Qingyu with a righteous look, stepped back from Blue Sky, a total picture of someone who did not recognise this mental nut case.

Blue Sky was flabbergasted.

He had never thought that this Ye Qingyu’s words would be so blatant and direct, using such a method to distance himself from him...such words were like indirectly asking for a beating. This demon king Ye, was even more brazen than he had imagined, and far more interesting.

Blue Sky abruptly broke into loud mirth and chuckles.

“Old Dean, this guy is too arrogant!”

“He is simply ignoring the elders!”

“He definitely has to be strictly punished ! ”

More teachers and elders stood out, condemning Blue Sky.

Ye Qingyu was somewhat rejoicing in Blue Sky’s disaster, silently cursing Blue Sky in his heart for trying to drag him into trouble with the elders along with himself. It seems like the relationships of Blue Sky with other people were not that great. Why was it that every teacher had righteous indignation on their faces, as if this Blue Sky had stolen their daughters...

“En, everyone’s words are reasonable. No need to worry, I will handle this.” The old Dean gave a glare at Blue Sky, angrily saying: “Nonsense, it seems like you don’t have a long memory! What are you waiting for, obediently return to the Grievance hall!”

“Dean, this...”

“It’s the Grievance hall again?”

“This can’t be?”

Everyone was speechless.

Every time, no matter what wrong Blue Sky had committed, the Dean would always give Blue Sky a glare and then order him to go to the Grievance hall. Counting up, in this year alone, eighty percent of Blue Sky’s time was spent within the Grievance hall. Although from the perspective of the rules and regulations of White Deer academy, this was normal but the problem was, very evidently, the Grievance Hall did not pose as any sort of punishment or threat for Blue Sky.

After time and time again, when such a punishment was given out, everyone felt that confining Blue Sky to the Grievance Hall, was instead a reward to him.

“Fine I’ll go! You old fool when you need me, you’ll release from the Grievance hall, but when you don’t need me anymore, you’ll just confine me again! You are really the worse!” Blue Sky was extremely speechless, but he honestly departed and left for the Grievance hall.

It seems like he would still obey the words of the Dean.

After the end of this little episode, the atmosphere of the Ascending heaven pavilion, once again returned to seriousness. Especially the second year students about to participate in the third round, every one of them had already fallen into a state of nervousness they had never experience before...

“Just pretend it’s a practical battle training!”

The old Dean let out a sigh, not saying anything special. At this time, words of encouragement, were useless.

Chapter 071 – Entering Into The Battlefield

Four hours later.

“Naturally, we’ve lost again.....”

“The second year has lost so pathetically. They were not even able to obtain one kill...they’re the same as the fourth years, they were completely dominated!”

“From the beginning until now, our White Deer academy, apart from the five consecutive kills of Blue Sky, has not even managed to kill one person!”

“It’s a pity, that Blue Sky is such a scoundrel. After being in the limelight once he then immediately left and ran away!”

“This is terrible, will we lose so badly that we will never be able to lift our heads high again?”

The students of White Deer academy’s morale was at its lowest point, simmering with hate and resignation.

“This is the difference between our strength, learn to accept it!” An Azure Phoenix student with his head held high sneered.

“You...” The White Deer students were enraged.

These several Azure Phoenix students, from the beginning of the third round, had stood there. Various types of contemptuous insults and invectives were thrown, showing off their superiority. They angered the White Deer students so much that they felt pain from grinding their teeth, but they had no method to retaliate.

“What about it? With a trash strength and a bad temper. If I was a White Deer academy student, I would have long committed suicide by ramming myself into a piece of tofu.” A pale female Azure Phoenix student let out a delicate giggle: “I really can’t understand, such a useless academy can enter into the ten great academies. It really makes us, a part of the ten great academies, feel humiliation!”

“You...don’t be too conceited.” A person as muscular as a black bear and looking seemingly simple, stood out. He was so furious that his teeth was about to be grinded into dust.

“What about it? Big black bear, you don’t accept this?” The almond eyes of this Azure Phoenix female student sent daggers through her gaze: “Do you believe, in this round, that you still won’t be able to obtain a single kill!”

“This time the person coming out, includes demon king Ye. He can definitely teach your group a lesson, wait and see!” The White Deer student as muscular as a bear said in a low, muffled tone.

“Hahaha ! ”

“He doesn’t know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth is! ! ”

“In this generation of first year, they are known as the most talented people of Azure Phoenix in this decade. Especially junior brother Xu Ge, he is the future star of the Azure Phoenix, they are enough to completely dominate you bunch of bumpkins!”

The Azure Phoenix students laughed impudently in a exaggerated manner.

A sharp chinned Azure Phoenix student, said a few words next to ear of the female student with almond eyes.

The almond eyes of this female student brightened, nodding her head with a smile. “Do you dare to have a bet? Big black bear!”

“What bet?” The muscular bear-like student said with anger. “Speak, could I, Xiong Yan, be afraid?”

“Xiong Yan is it? The bet is very simple. If your so called Ye Qingyu is not able to obtain a kill,” The large eyed female student gave the sharp chinned companion next to her a glance, then he promptly spat a goblet of phlegm on the ground. The gaze of the female student with large eyes held an undisguised challenge and provocation: “Then you will kneel down, and eat this ball of spit.”

“What?”

“This is too much...”

“How could the students of Azure Phoenix be so unrefined?”

The surrounding White Deer students were in a panic. Such a condition, was a complete insult and mockery. These Azure Phoenix students had gone too far, they did not have a shred of culture or elegance.

“What about if senior brother Ye is able to obtain a kill? Will you eat this spit?” The big bear like man, Xiong Yan, asked instead.

“There’s no what about.” The female student with almond eyes coldly laughed.

“This is a bet, then naturally preparations have to be made for your lost. I won’t make you eat that phlegm, such a humiliating act, the people of White Deer academy is not unrefined enough to force you to do so. My condition is simple; if senior brother Ye is able to obtain a kill, then you will kneel down and say three times, ‘Azure Phoenix is garbage’.” Xiong Yan’s gaze similarly had a provocation and contempt. “What about it? If you don’t dare, then just admit it.”

The female student of Azure Phoenix was incited by the contemptuous words and gaze of this burly man. “Who says I don’t dare? I accept, this wager will be decided as such.”

The surrounding Azure Phoenix students began laughing, not worried in the slightest.

It was not possible for Azure Phoenix academy to lose.

.....

.....

“Prepare yourself, the last round, is about to begin.”

The voice of the Dean could be heard.

Above the sculpture of Formation Emperor Luoso, five beams of golden light shone out. It enveloped Qin Wushuang, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo, Song Xiaojun and Ye Qingyu, these five people within.

Ye Qingyu could only feel the vision in front of him blurring, a warm feeling surrounding him, as if he was submerged in hot water. It was also as if something from his body, was taken from him....

The next instant, there was a rapid sense of descent.

Boom !

His legs suddenly touched the ground

The golden light disappeared.

Everything in his vision had changed.

Ye Qingyu appeared on a desolate and ancient nine metre blue stone

altar. On the coarse lines of the rock, a mysterious rune pattern extended, one step by one step, downwards!

Standing on top of the altar, Ye Qingyu looked around him.

On the centre of the altar, was a normal sized sculpture of the Formation Emperor Luoso. The workmanship was extremely rough, as if it had experienced tens of thousands of years of wind and rain. The stature was covered with mottled surface potholes, and possessed vague facial features but what was strange was that it was still extremely vivid overall.

Boom!Boom!Boom!Boom!

Abruptly another four large bangs sounded. Four golden beams of light descended from the sky, and four silhouettes also appeared on top of the ancient altar.

It was Qin Wushuang, Xia Houwu, Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun these four people

For some reason, the time they had descended, was later than Ye Qingyu.

“Brother Qingyu...” At the first instance, Song Xiaojun rushed beside him, her little face rubbing against Ye Qingyu’s arm.

Ye Qingyu patted her head.

“This is the [Boundary canyon battlefield?” Song Qingluo took a deep breath. “The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth is much more concentrated than the outside world, this really is a place suitable for training!”

“Welcome to the Boundary canyon battlefield. Warriors of the human race, glory is waiting for you!”

A majestic and vast voice resounded throughout the sky.

It was as if this was the words of a deity.

This was the voice of Formation Emperor Luoso.

As the creator of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the voice of the Formation emperor was, using a special sound formation, preserved. Anyone who entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], would hear a similar phrase, giving the martial artists of the human race courage and confidence.

“I’m going to the North West road!” Qin Wushuang only said these words, then turned and left.

“I’m going North East ! ”Xia Houwu also at the first instant made his choice. Jumping down from the altar, he turned and look at the three people left behind, giving them a glare. His tone had a shred of threat and icy coldness: “Don’t follow me.”

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield] there were the North road, North West road and North East road you could choose from, as well as the three armies within each path.

The position that Ye Qingyu was standing on right now, the altar was the headquarters.

Going down from the altar, there was a palace of the human race around a thousand metres away. There were ten protector statues surrounding this palace, and within these statues were defensive runes and formations. When encountering the attacks of enemies, every ten seconds it would emit a destructive light beam. This was one of the powers of the sentries of this palace.

Further from here, was a massive blue city wall. It entirely surrounded the headquarters.

The blue city wall had three large gates, which are namely the North West, North, and North East gates. Each of them led to three different canyons.

These three canyons, were three paths.

As you followed along the canyons, you could find the flattest path that was walked by the ancient people, heading straight to the headquarters of the enemy. It was also the only paths that the armies could pass through.

Apart from these canyons, the other areas of the [Boundary canyon

battlefield], was a dense and desolate forests. Filled with wild beasts, spirit beasts, miasma, traps, floods, mountains and rapids, there were unimaginable dangers and obstacles within. It made it so that it was impossible for the rune armies to simply pass through.

After the battle had finally begun, from the headquarters of the both parties, there would be endless rune soldiers that would be born. Heading to the three respective gates and following the canyon paths, it would face off against the armies of the enemies.

The rune soldiers in different classes of [Boundary canyon battlefields], would have different battle strengths.

This time, the [Boundary canyon battlefield] opened by the two academies was targeted at the young students, and hence was the most foundation and basic of battlefields. The rune soldiers that were born, the individual strength of each soldier was very weak and comparable to someone at the first stage of the ordinary martial level.

And for people like Ye Qingyu who had descended onto this battlefield, their role was commanding these soldiers and arraying various traps.

The strength of an expert, would be displayed utterly within such a battle. The number of rune soldiers produced by each headquarters were the exact same, with the same battle strength so the final victor of this battle, would be determined by the people who had appeared on both sides.

Only by appearing within this place, could you truly experience the perfection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

This place, was as if it was an entirely separate and real world.

Everything, was realistic. If you stood on top of the blue city walls of the headquarters, you could vaguely hear, from the vast expanse of the pristine wilderness, the terrifying roars of the the wild beasts. You were able to hear the whistle of hurricanes blowing through the forest, you were able to see peaks of mountains towering within the miasma like ancient beasts...

Within the headquarters, there were many architectures and protector statues.

If these buildings were destroyed, then this would signify their loss.

The aim of the White Deer students and the Azure Phoenix students, was to destroy the opposing army's buildings, and obtain the final victory.

“I’ve heard that the flow of time in the [Boundary canyon battlefield] is different from the outside world. Here, it flows much slower, two hours outside is equal to three days of time here.”

Song Qinglou said, as if muttering to herself.

“It’s this, the average time that each round occurred within was four hours. In other words, we need to spend at least six days of time within this world!” Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

From the moment they descended, half an hour had already passed.

After Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu left, Ye Qingyu and the others carefully observed and noted everything within the headquarters, and only halted when they understood everything clearly. Outside this realm, they had already received the specialist explanations of those old teachers. But words from someone else's mouth was entirely different from your own personal experience.

Chapter 072 – Choosing To Enter The Wilderness

“The time is about right. The leftover Northern road, we three...” Song Qingluo said hesitantly.

The aim of both Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu was extremely clear.

They were from the two most influential families within the city, and naturally did not care about the Spirit herbs and rare medicines within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. If they wanted a Spirit beast, they could also think of other methods to obtain one in the outside world. There was not a need to go to the wild areas outside the canyons and place themselves in danger.

Within this battlefield, every time you were able to kill a rune soldier, you were rewarded by the Boundary canyon. You could obtain a strand of yuan qi forever, and this type of increase in strength would persist even when you left the [Boundary canyon battlefield].

So therefore, from the perspective of these people, before being killed by the students of Azure Phoenix academy, they would do their best and kill the most demon rune soldiers. This way, they would be able to obtain the most rewards, this way they could maximise their gains.

As for the overall victory?

From the very start, they had not cared about such a thing.

One person completely controlling a canyon road, was unquestionably the best choice if you wanted to kill the most rune demon soldiers.

The words of Song Qingluo had a hint of unwillingness to split the rewards of the Northern path between three people.

“You and Xiaojun head to the North path, at the very least you can take care of each other.” Ye Qingyu said unhesitatingly.

“I want to go with Brother Qingyu.” The lips of the little loli pouted out till oil bottles were able to hang from it.

“Listen to me, I’ll go and find you shortly.” Ye Qingyu lifted his hand, in the process of giving the little loli a flick on the head.

“Brother Qingyu is annoying.” The little loli quickly evaded, jumping to one side.

Finally the cousins left together.

In the entire headquarters, there was only Ye Qingyu left.

Suddenly—

“There is two hours left till the enemies will reach the battlefield, completely crush them!”

The vast voice of the Formation Emperor Luoso sounded out through the entire battlefield yet again. The voice was like the beat of a war drum, causing one's blood to boil, and causing someone's will to do battle exponentially rise.

Ye Qingyu stood in front of the gate of the North path, a smile appearing on his face.

“What does the rewards from killing rune soldiers matter. The largest pile of wealth in this battlefield, is really within the wilderness...allow me, to rule over this entire battle.”

His figure was like lightning, rushing out from the headquarters.

.....

.....

“It's started, it's started, the fourth round has finally begun!”

“I hope there can be a pleasant surprise!”

“As long as we don't get completely destroyed by Azure Phoenix!”

“Give us a little bit of hope!”

In the centre of the practice rounds, the students clustered in front of

the stone mirror, said in a pleading tone, almost as if they were praying.

.....

.....

“What’s happening? Ye Qingyu has chosen to enter the wilderness?”

Ascending Heaven pavilion.

The second and third year representatives who had already been eliminated, through the formation projection, were able to see everything that happened within the battlefield. Instantly, shock was evident on the faces of every person.

In the previous three rounds, there was no one who had chosen the wilderness to become their field of activity

Although in the formation projection, they were only able to see the actions of their own party and not the doings of the Azure Phoenix people, but nearly every student felt Ye Qingyu had gone mad.

“He’s definitely afraid, he’s definitely afraid. He thinks that by entering the desolate wilderness, the people of Azure Phoenix won’t be able to find him, and he can live for a longer time.” Someone said in a thoughtful tone.

“If it is really this, then he is despicable...” Another person said.

“To allow such a person to enter the battlefield, is really a type of humiliation.” Han Xiaofei coldly sneered.

“That’s right. Compared to dying in battle, such a coward act, is even worse.” Jiang Xiaohan chimed in.

Wang Yan gave the two a glare, and said in a calm voice. “It’s I who permitted Ye Qingyu to enter the battlefield.

The two hesitated, an embarrassed expression appearing on their face, instantly shutting their mouths.

.....

.....

The canopy of the forest was more than ten metres high, forming an green layer that encompassed everything. It blocked the sunlight entirely and made the world underneath dark and cold.

Ye Qingyu walked carefully, step by step into the forest.

On the surrounding boulders, both large and small, they were entirely covered with emerald green lichen. Various gorgeous poison flowers were sprinkled upon the decaying vegetation, beautiful but fatal, making the entire environment even more unearthly.

If you observed with care, you would discover within the air that there was strands of pale green smoke. This was the miasma. Mortal and deadly, even if an expert of the Spirit spring stage accidentally breathed this in, their life would be placed at risk.

Within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the three gorges were the safest. In this desolate wilderness, there was a multitude of unimaginable dangers, making many people think that this was a forbidden area. Unless they were forced to a desperate situation, no one would choose to enter the wild area.

At least within the explanation of those teachers of White Deer academy specialising in the this battlefield, the wilderness was an area that was highly recommended not to enter.

But in the booklet Ye Qingyu was able to obtain, the wilderness was said to be most valuable location within the whole battlefield.

This was one of the reasons Ye Qingyu had chosen the wilderness.

He had calculated carefully, Qin Wushuang and the others, could at least endure approximately two days on the three different paths. In other words, within these two days, there was not a need for Ye Qingyu to reinforce them, being able to do what he wished within this timeframe.

Ye Qingyu must carefully utilise this time to raise his strength.

Then, he would worry about the upcoming battle.

Carefully observing the surrounding terrain, occasionally climbing up to the ten metre high canopy, to look at the landscape and environment around him, Ye Qingyu rapidly advanced deep into the wilderness.

Martial artists who entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], their ability to fly would be suppressed. Through this, the entire battlefield would become incomparably immense. In a short amount of time, very little people would be able to traverse the entire battlefield.

After approximately two hours of time, Ye Qingyu finally arrived at the place he was searching for.

On the way, he had already experienced the ambush of several demonic beasts and underwent numerous battles.

Thankfully in such a class of [Boundary canyon battlefield], the demonic beasts within could not be counted as powerful. Ye Qingyu managed to handle it without expending too much energy.

This was a depressed valley, surrounded by hills and mountains. There was a clear waterfall flowing from deep within the valley, and occasionally howls after howls of demonic wolves sounded from within the valley.

[Demonic Wolf valley].

“Very many people think that only by killing rune soldiers, are you able to obtain yuan qi that persists. They don’t know, that by killing demonic beasts within the wilderness, one is also able to obtain a growth in their

yuan qi growth. And from just a single entity, the yuan qi reward contained within a demonic beast is by far greater than any rune soldiers!

Ye Qingyu grabbed the spear from his holster, combining the two parts of the Inexorable spear. Two hands holding onto the spear, he step by step entered into the [Demonic wolf valley].

As one of the ten areas where demonic beasts gathered within the [Boundary canyon battlefield], there were over a hundred demonic wolves contained within the [Demonic wolf valley]. Of these wolves, there were many that were two headed or even three headed mutations, with a battle power that could be comparable to someone of the Spirit spring stage. The power of a single wolf could not be counted as frightening; but when hundreds of demonic wolves gathered together, it was enough to make many experts pale with fear.

But what Ye Qingyu needed to do right now, was to challenge this pack of demonic wolves.

Only after slaughtering this pack of wolves, would he be able to obtain a great amount of yuan qi.

This would allow Ye Qingyu to perfectly form his second Spirit spring completely, stabilising himself at this stage.

Only through reaching this stage, could Ye Qingyu have confidence in directly facing the so called geniuses of Azure Phoenix academy.

Killing intent emitted from all around.

The wind rustled the grass.

In the very second that he stepped into the valley, his presence was discovered by the low class demonic wolves near the outer edges.

A savage threatening howl sounded from deep within the foliage. Two wolves the size of calves appeared. A scarlet red, brutal and bloodthirsty eyes rose with wind and gradually came nearer. When they opened their mouths to howl, a nauseating smell of blood came wafting over.

These two huge wolves were pure black, fur as sharp as steel needles. When their paws landed on boulders, deep indents would be left behind.

They lifted their heads and howled to the sky.

The sounds reverberated throughout the valley.

Then the whole valley, as if in response to this, howls upon howls replied from far away, coming ever nearer, as if an army was gathering.

“Must finish this battle quickly.”

Ye Qingyu moved, his figure like a bolt of lightning rushing out.

“Ao!Ao!Ao—— ! ”

The two black huge wolves flew through the air at the same time, their sharp claws extending outwards. They sliced apart the air, and blades formed by wind, indiscernible by the human eye, came whistling at Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu did not avoid at all.

The Inexorable spear vibrated with sounds of DingDingDing, the spear swings blossoming in the air. The impact of the metal resounded throughout, and the pale silver blades of wind all shattered.

The next second, the cold light of the spear covered the sky.

An icy light stabbed through the gaping bloody mouth of the first wolf, stabbing through his throat and piercing out. The point of the spear continued on, along with the still struggling corpse of the first wolf, piercing the abdomen of the second huge black wolf...

“Ao.....Wu.....”

Accompanied by the sounds of whimpering, the two wolves with a strength comparable to the peak of the fifth stage of the ordinary martial level, lost their lives in an instant.

Before Ye Qingyu had a chance to recover his breath, a strong wind ambushed him from behind.

It was another huge black wolf rapidly rushing to kill.

And at this time, from all around, pairs upon pairs of scarlet red bloodthirsty eyes surrounded him, with no end in sight. The special bloody scent of the demonic wolves completely enveloped the surroundings, the brutal killing intent was like tornadoes swirling within the wild grass.

Killing descended.

Demonic wolves were a pack that did not fear death. Once they were incited, they could only be calmed by death.

Ye Qingyu knew in his heart, the most terrifying battle was about to begin.

Before he could swing his spear, in the time of a spark, he stepped slightly sideways. The razor sharp claw of the demonic wolf rubbed past his shoulder, passing by with the width of a hair. Holding his spear in his right hand, he punched out with his left explosively.

Peng!

The black demonic wolf was directly blown apart by the frightening force contained within that punch.

And immediately after Ye Qingyu retreated a step, his fist turning into a palm strike, slapping on the two corpses of the wolves skewered onto his spear.

The corpses of the wolves whistled out, directly hitting two wolves in mid air. Their bones immediately broke, falling to the ground and struggling to get up.

Murderous intent overflowed from all around.

Seven black wolves even larger than usual, as if bolts of lightning, came swishing towards him. Their sharp claws spread opened, a flurry of sharp weapons, wanting to tear Ye Qingyu into shreds.

“Scram ! ”

Ye Qingyu held the inexorable spear using both hands, and explosions after explosions of noise resounded, booming to all parts.

The black wolves were all blown outwards like flying objects by the long spear.

Ye Qingyu's black hair danced wildly, his demonic like nature invoked. The three metre long massive spear within his hands, transformed into black lightning. Sometimes sweeping, sometimes snapping, as if a black dragon. Everywhere it passed, the bodies of wolves would crack and collapse.

Chapter 073 – Not Allowed To Leave

This was a slaughter that was difficult to stop.

Unless there was a side that completely collapsed.

The inexorable spear constantly sliced through the air, the demonic wolves also howled in unceasing rage.

Blood spurted everywhere.

Bones shattered.

The large black wolves constantly died. Strands upon strands of yuan qi would fly out from their corpses, assimilating with Ye Qingyu's body.

This was the reward of the battlefield.

[Boundary canyon formation] was a world that was constructed using the formation martial path. No matter whether it was rune soldiers, rune demon soldiers or rune monsters, they were all constructed using runes and formations. They were not living beings that were made from flesh and blood, but rather formed from consolidated energy.

This type of formation was incomparably profound, far exceeding the imagination of a martial artist like Ye Qingyu. After the demonic wolves were killed, there would be blood spilt, as if everything was real.

But in the end, the corpses would transform into formation yuan qi. A part of this would return to the battlefield itself and a part that would enter into the killer's body.

The formation martial path created by the Formation Emperor Luoso, was like a technique created by the gods. As if it had the power of creation itself.

Everytime he killed a demonic wolf, Ye Qingyu could sense, that his expended inner yuan was being replenished. It constantly grew during this battle.

This was one of the reasons why he continued to endure in such a desperate battle.

However, in the end, injuries could not be prevented on Ye Qingyu's body.

There was a blade of wind that passed by the defence of the spear, slashing at Ye Qingyu. It sliced apart his clothing, and on his sturdy muscles, left a line of blood.

Not even an hour had passed when every inch of his clothing were in tatters. The exposed muscles were as if it were sliced apart by a sharp little knife after His flesh was being carved apart, blood dripping down.

The two headed demonic wolves and three headed demonic wolves also began to appear.

In the different heads of these wolves, different sprays would be spat out. There were toxic gas, burning flames, icy cold, different killing techniques. Even for someone of the Spirit spring stage, this was enough to threaten their life. On one hand Ye Qingyu needed to avoid the close range attacks of the normal demonic wolves and on the other hand he had to be careful of the long range attacks of the demonic wolves on the outer edges.

Such a battle, continued on for four hours in total.

Finally, all the demonic wolves in the [Demon wolf cannon] were completely slaughtered.

Ye Qingyu was bathed in blood, as if he had been executed through a thousand cuts. His entire upper body, apart from his head, there was not a piece of flesh that was intact. Blood covered both his upper and lower body, and it was unknown whether this blood belonged to the demonic wolves, or he himself...

“His mother, the booklet did not say that to challenge this pack of demonic wolves would be so difficult. I was nearly torn apart by this pack of wolves...” Demon king Ye said, trepidation still remaining after that traumatic battle.

He leaned against the inexorable spear with one hand. Only through doing this could he stand stably. His other hand felt his own face, then let out a breath of relief: “Fortunately I desperate covered my face, otherwise such a handsome appearance would not be preserved...”

From the moment he had stepped into the [Demon wolf valley], exactly four hours had gone by.

Ye Qingyu could be said to have won only by a shred.

Thankfully his cultivation technique for his inner yuan, was the nameless breathing technique. Sustained and prolonged, his speciality was endurance. Especially after his flesh body had experienced the numerous beatings of that old thing, the toughness of his body far exceeded martial artists of the same stage. Even so, he could barely withstand such injuries.

Otherwise, if someone of the same stage as him had experience such an attack, they would most likely expend all their inner yuan. They would consume their entire strength and would be dragged to their death in this valley.

Deeply breathing in, Ye Qingyu sat cross legged amongst the corpses of the wolves, beginning to cultivate and recover his yuan qi.

As the nameless breathing technique activated, the yuan qi from heaven and earth in this valley, came rushing down towards this teenager covered in blood.

Within the dantian world, the yuan qi water within the first Spirit spring had already been expended by about ninety percent. The second Spirit spring was not yet fully completed, but the yuan qi waters within were also nearly completely consumed.

“Within this battlefield, the recovery rate of yuan qi is at least six times quicker than the outside world...” Ye Qingyu quickly discovered the discrepancy.

This also represented that training with the [Boundary canyon battlefield] was much faster than in the outside world – this was also one of the many reasons people competed to enter this competition.

Within the Demon wolf valley, a yuan qi vortex was formed.

Above in the sky, clouds formed from yuan qi began to sink down, as if they were forming a funnel. It completely enveloped the entire Demon wolf valley. And in the centre of these floating yuan qi clouds, was namely Ye Qingyu, his figure as small as an ant.

This scene was hard to believe.

The funnel that was several thousands of metres long made from floating yuan qi clouds, abruptly rotated. Finally, as if a large whale was swallowing water, everything was completely absorbed into Ye Qingyu’s body. There were constantly yuan qi from Heaven and Earth that gathered from all directions, then entering into this tiny silhouette...

It was hard to imagine, that a body that seemed so tiny, could contain such a large quantity of yuan qi.

And if such a scene was seen by other people, they would be stunned at the rate of absorption of Ye Qingyu in taking in yuan qi.

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

“He’s completely cleared out the [Demon wolf valley]!”

“But will this affect the grand competition in some way?”

“His courage is admirable, but to waste his time within the desolate wild areas, is really something stupid!”

Students secretly discussed with low voices.

On the formation projection above, occasionally images would appear showing Ye Qingyu’s actions within the battlefield. Fighting against the pack of demonic wolves had shocked many student representatives. Ye Qingyu’s valiant figure had made many of them secretly apprehensive, but it was only limited to this.

Even until now, they could not see what the impact of Ye Qingyu’s actions would be on deciding the final victor of this grand competition.

And when they saw Ye Qingyu absorbing yuan qi from Heaven and Earth at an astonishing rate, they were dumbfounded. They could not help but feel jealous.

“What’s happening? Could it be that training within the wild areas has some special amplifications?”

“Such a rate of absorbing yuan qi, is too fast!”

“This type of speed...could he have entered into the state of demonic fire?”

Han Xiaofei and Jiang Xiaohan looked at each other, each able to discern the other's shock and surprise.

They were fourth year students, and this was not their first time entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. Their understanding of the battlefield was much greater compared to those of the first and second year students. But even they could not be sure, that training in the wild areas, would have such an amplification effect on the rate of training.

Because previously, in their five opportunities in entering the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they had not even attempted to enter the wilderness once.

In many of the lessons of White Deer academy, the recommendation given by the teachers were ‘distance yourself from the wild areas.’ Because the benefits from an area with unknown dangers could not be compared to the benefits gained in the three main canyon roads.

The old teacher who had previously scolded Ye Qingyu for deviating from the trodden path, his face was slightly red.

They currently could not confirm what effect the wilderness had.

The tradition of White Deer academy, had always been to avoid the wilderness.

Occasionally there would be students who did not listen, and after tentatively entering the wilderness, they would die experiencing the dangers hidden within. They did not even have a chance to do battle with the opponents, before dying in the hands of the demonic beasts and the dangerous terrains, indirectly confirming the words of the teachers.

But right now...

Even though the faces of the elders were still calm and peaceful, their hearts trembled slightly. Could it be that the wilderness area contained some secrets within?

And at this time, the formation projection suddenly changed, switching the perspective to another place.

Carnage, burned like fire.

Some students with slightly lower strength, before they could discern anything, a fierce battle had already ended in the North East canyon path.

In the projection, the conservative killing of demon rune soldiers by Xia Houwu was shown. However, at this time, his corpse was already lying within a pool of blood, dying through one strike alone. His spirit transformed into a streak of light, flying towards the direction of the headquarters...

Xia Houwu had died in battle!

The person killed him was a youth around the ages of eleven or twelve, wearing the robe of Azure Phoenix academy. He had a handsome appearance, a red mole between his eyebrows and a long sword held in his hands with an electric light lingering on the sword blade.

Death in one strike.

This red mole youth had scorn on his face, his attitude extremely leisurely, as if he had just done something insignificant. He casually stomped on the corpse of Xia Houwu, wiping the blood stains on his sword with the corpse. Shaking his head, the long sword swung out. The light of the blade was like a sky filled with floating snow, tens of rune soldiers turning into ashes immediately. Stream after stream of yuan qi energy entered into his body...

This youth, had never appeared before.

But once he appeared, in a split second, he had slaughtered Xia Houwu.

The difference, was really too large.

The people within Ascending heaven pavilion seeing this, was shocked speechless.

Disgracing the corpse of Xia Houwu, was obviously an act of provocation. The reason that everyone was silent, was not because they did not feel anger or fury, but it was because in the previous three rounds, such an humiliating action had already occurred too many times.

The teacher of white Deer academy had dark expressions, everyone filled with the look of defeat.

The students that they had bitterly nurtured, in their eyes were geniuses with bright futures, were the pillars that would cause the White Deer academy to flourish once again. They had placed great expectations upon them, but who would have guessed in front of the Azure Phoenix students, they were like children learning to walk, without any shred of power to resist.

Such a defeat, how could it not make someone grieve.

Within the crowd, only the old Dean and the head teacher of the first years, Wang Yan had a blank face throughout this, without joy or sorrow. They fully concentrated their attention on the formation projection, without displaying any hint of their thoughts.

“Ai, a crushing defeat, such a grand competition...is not worth watching ! ”An old teacher sighed, slumping and turning to leave.

There were also several teachers that had disappointment on their faces, about to leave.

“Students that you have taught by your own hands, representatives

that you have chosen yourself, even if they are stomped into the mud, you must finish watching their competition.” The gaze of the old Dean stared fixatedly at the projection, his tone determined and resolute. “You are not allowed to leave.”

Chapter 074 – Sentry Guard

The leaving figures of the teachers stopped.

Numerous gazes focused upon the projection formation once again.

The red mole youth's figure floated through the air, as if he was an immortal in general. He flashed throughout the battlefield where hundreds of rune soldiers and demon rune soldiers were fighting. Every time his sword stabbed out, he would definitely kill a rune soldier.

Ever since he appeared, every rune soldier that died was killed by his sword, and not by demon rune soldiers.

This represented, that every strand of yuan qi from each rune soldier, was perfectly absorbed by the red mole youth. Nothing was wasted.

During Xia Houwu's performance, at the most he could do was to kill three out of every five deaths of a demon rune soldier. Compared to this teenager, it was like the difference between the clouds and the mud.

“Within [Boundary canyon battlefield], you must do your utmost to kill as many demon rune soldiers as possible, in order to maximise the yuan qi reward. The best method to do this, is when each demon rune soldier is about to die, to perform the last hit using your sword. This is not only the easiest method to turn the tides of battle but the final judgement will also award the kill to you. You will obtain the yuan qi energy contained within these rune soldiers...such a technique, is called the supplement

strike.”

The old Dean suddenly spoke.

His voice resounded through the ears of every White Deer student present.

“Such a technique, I believe your teachers have already spoken to you before. Apart from the first year students who have not yet interacted deeply with the [Boundary canyon battlefield], the other representatives has already received specialist training. It’s a pity that this grand competition clearly shows the basics of your supplement strike, compared to the students of the Azure Phoenix, is by far lacking. You should carefully observe, the red mole teenager is only a first year student of Azure Phoenix academy, but his supplement blade technique is exceedingly brilliant. In terms of him seizing the opportunities in battle, he is near the summit. Out of all you, there is only Bai Yuqing and Han Shuangfu the two strongest of the fourth years, who are able to achieve this.”

The students of the White Deer academy lowered their heads in shame.

Within the battlefield, in every wave of assault, hundreds of demon rune soldiers and rune soldiers would do battle. The situation changed drastically every second, and in such a situation, to have a hundred percent success rate in performing the supplement strike, was too difficult.

But they could not deny, the red mole youth in the projection, only possessing the strength of a first year, yet he was able to perfectly achieve

this.

“The reason I am saying this, is not to make you ashamed, or to humiliate you. I only want to remind you, to discard your muddled thoughts and observe in detail. Don’t let the rage and hatred blind you, you must learn from the opponents and improve.” The old Dean finally turned his head to regard the geniuses of White Deer academy. He suddenly smiled, with an gentle demeanour. “Therefore, don’t lower your heads. You must look carefully.”

After a moment of hesitation, the teenagers all lifted their heads, concentrating their attention on the projection above them.

Some people still fumed with rage between gritted teeth.

Some people’s vision gradually began to clear.

They all had a different power of comprehension, different temperaments and different aptitudes. With regards to the words of the old Dean, their understanding were also naturally different, and what they gained from these words were also different.

Jiang Xiaohan observed for a moment, then suddenly opened her mouth: “If Ye Qingyu did not selfishly enter the wilderness area, and instead went to one of the Northern paths, teaming up with Xia Houwu, perhaps they could suppress the red mole teenager. Even if they are not able to kill him, at least they can stabilise the situation...”

Some people subconsciously nodded their heads.

An elder who had previously scolded Ye Qingyu, hearing this nodded his head. “From the battle of the [Demon wolf valley], we can see that the battle strength of Ye Qingyu is remarkable. It is only a pity, that he has gone down the wrong path...”

.....

.....

Demon wolf valley.

Ye Qingyu woke up from his trance.

Within the dantian world, the second Spirit spring was bubbling and boiling with vitality. Clear spring waters jetted into the sky, like a pillar of water, completely drenching the desert thousands of metres around it, bringing with it liveliness and energy!

The second Spirit spring had been completely formed.

“I’ve finally entered into the second Spirit spring stage, I can fight in this battle now!”

Ye Qingyu stood up, the previous wounds and injuries on his body had completely disappeared. Under the nourishment of the inner yuan , not a single scar remained. He threw away the tattered clothing on his body, and changed into a tight fitting black garment, and tied his thick black

hair behind his head.

The corpses of the wolf pack, had already completely disappeared.

The demonic wolves here, was in the end, life forms born from formations. A period of time after dying, they would dissolve in Heaven and Earth. After several months of time, under the special laws of the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they would appear again.

Perceiving the inner yuan raging and boiling with his body, Ye Qingyu's mind was filled with a bottomless heroic spirit.

The domineering behaviour of Azure Phoenix had incited every White Deer academy student. To say that Ye Qingyu did not care about this, was false. In the end, what he also wore was the uniform of the White Deer academy, and on his chest was the badge of the White Deer academy. Of course Ye Qingyu wanted to reverse the situation, even if just by winning one round.

But the strength of the Azure Phoenix students, was really extremely powerful.

Ye Qingyu would not be able to completely dominate the other five people on his own. He must cooperate with his companions, but the representatives of the first years included Qin Wushuang and Xia Houwu. From the start he had given up on them – they would never cooperate with Ye Qingyu.

Therefore Ye Qingyu must first raise his own strength in order to win.

Right now, after fully completing the second Spirit spring, he finally had confidence.

“By my calculations, eight hours should have already passed. On the three different paths, I estimate that the armies are about to come face to face.” Ye Qingyu estimated in his heart. The location he was in right now, reinforcing the Song sisters* in the Northern path, was the most logical choice.

He stood up, about to take action.

But at this time, an abnormality appeared.

In the sea of consciousness, the bronze ancient book, [Fiendgod titled chart] that had always been silent, suddenly vibrated. A strange stream of energy gushed out, crazily absorbing the inner yuan in Ye Qingyu's body for the second time. The huge suction, made Ye Qingyu unable to control the flow of his inner yuan.

“Crap, it's happening again

Ye Qingyu rolled his eyes.

Thankfully, a similar thing had already happened once. Ye Qingyu knew what it was doing, so he did not struggle anymore, allowing the bronze book to freely consume his inner yuan.

Time passed by minute by minute.

In the blink of an eye, fifteen minutes had passed. The two Spirit springs within Ye Qingyu's dantian world had dried up completely, and within his sea of consciousness, the bronze book became incomparably resplendent, blossoming with a glorious radiance.

After an abrupt quivering, pure inner yuan gushed out from the ancient bronze book. It scattered throughout Ye Qingyu's four limbs and his hundreds of bones, nourishing his joints, meridians and acupuncture points. Like rivers leading to the sea, it returned to his dantian world, once again becoming waters in the two Spirit springs.

The [Little Shang sword] nourishing in Ye Qingyu's first spirit spring, received an even purer inner yuan for it to be enveloped in. The sword produced waves after waves of sounds, as if it had gained intelligence, luminous and dazzling!

“So it was really the same as the first time.”

Ye Qingyu let out a breath of relief.

He suddenly realised, after the ancient bronze book had absorbed his inner yuan for the first time, the contents within this book had transformed greatly and he was able to see the four moves of the golden armoured king. And this time, would new battle techniques also appear?

Mindful of this, Ye Qingyu could not wait anymore.

He feared that the spectators of the Ascending heaven pavilion would be able to discover the secret of the ancient bronze book. This time he did not summoned the ancient bronze book in reality, but directly entered into his sea of consciousness, and using his consciousness to peruse the ancient book.

.....

.....

“Eh? What’s happened? Why can we suddenly not see Ye Qingyu anymore?”

Within the Ascending heaven pavilion, some people shouted in surprise.

On the projection formation above their heads, when the image had switched to Ye Qingyu’s position, suddenly everything was inky black. Nothing could be seen.

“It’s been obscured by a fog formation!”

“Why would such a thing happen ? ”

“Could Ye Qingyu have died ? ”

“It can’t be, even if he died we would be able to see his corpse...”

“Such a situation has never occurred before.”

Even the teachers and supervisors began talking all at once. In the realm created by the Formation Emperor, [Boundary canyon battlefield], there had never been an error that had occurred before. The formation projection, above their heads, was also a part of the battlefield, and it had never been unable to observe someone on their side...this was slightly abnormal.

The old Dean and Wang Yan looked at each other, their expressions becoming serious.

.....

A short while later.

Ye Qingyu had finished reading the bronze ancient book.

“It’s a pity, the [Titled Fiendgods] section, nothing new has appeared that could be read, there is only still the four moves of the golden armoured king...”

“The section [Titled divine weapons] is still completely pale, with no way to investigate...”

“It seems like [Titled strange objects] section will not have any changes either...Eh? That’s not right, this section has some new information that has appeared, there’s something that is shining with light...But, this thing called [Sentry guard], what uses does it have? “

The [Fiendgod title chart] was split into three major sections. When Ye Qingyu looked at the third section, [Titled strange objects], his eyes brightened. On the first page of this section, he could see a small part that was currently radiating with a pale light.

This light could be read.

Ye Qingyu carefully examined the object radiating light. What glowed seemed to be something akin to a bamboo rod, from the proportion of it, the actual object should be something that was half a metre long. On the topmost part of this pole, there was a gem that was black on the inside but white on the outside, as if it was something like an eyeball.

The name of this object, was called [Sentry guard].

What use did it have?

Ye Qingyu's will activated, his consciousness interacting with the contents of this section. Information appeared in his mind.

Instantly, he understood the uses of the [Sentry guard].

“Hahaha, this really is when I want to sleep, someone will hand me a pillow. This is too amazing, I can completely dominate the Azure Phoenix academy now!”

.....

On the Northern path.

Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo were in the midst of battle.

This pair of sisters had already entered the Spirit spring stage, and in each of their dantian world, excavated one Spirit spring. The cultivation technique Song Xiaojun trained in was the flame mantra, able to control the power of flames. And as for Song Qingluo, she trained in the green wood mantra, able to control wooden attribute inner yuan.

Hundreds of rune soldiers and an equal number of demon rune soldiers slaughtered each other fiercely on the battlefield. The sound of their battle cries shuddered the Heavens, the bloody smell permeating throughout the entire canyon, the flow of blood like rivers...

Chapter 075 – Double Kill (1)

“Something doesn’t feel right.” Song Qingluo carefully evaluated her surroundings.

The two sides of the canyon, were rolling hills and forests. As if it was a jade like ocean of canopy, it undulated with the wind. The forest was dark and damp, and there would occasionally be the roar of ancient beasts that would reverberate from the forest, as if it was the growls of the spirits that had died in battle.

There was a murderous aura that indistinctly emitted from the closest under brush.

The sea of grass was enough to submerge a grown person. The shadows of this forest could hide anything and could also submerge everything.

Song Qingluo could clearly sense danger approaching.

“Run!” She shouted at little loli.

But——

“Wanting to leave now, is a little too late.”

A voice came from behind them.

Under the sunlight, a teenager with snowy white short hair appeared, the hair as if they were needles of cold steel that flickered on his head. Without knowing when he appeared, he walked out from the forest from the direction of the headquarters of White Deer academy, cutting off their path of retreat.

“Ai, this is really boring and senseless.” Another voice sounded.

This time it was a youth with fire red long hair. He yawned, with an extremely bored expression, both hands behind his head, walking from the other side. There was a smile of disdain on his face: “We originally wanted to finish you within ten breaths of time, but seeing that you were girls, me and Lin Nuo decided to sleep under the protector statue for a while. We’ve already given you eight hours of time to kill the soldiers... It’s fine, no need to thank us for our mercy. Now obediently die!”

A strong yuan qi turbulence gradually emitted from the bodies of these teenagers.

One front, one back, they completely surround them.

An unwilling nervousness appeared on the Song sisters.

The strength of the Azure Phoenix academy had already been fully exhibited during the previous three rounds. It had caused a psychological shadow to be born on the hearts of these girls.

“Hoho, two pitiful people. You must remember the people who killed

you. We are the Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai of Azure Phoenix academy.”The palm of the short white haired teenager, Lin Nuo, slowly extended outwards and a deep green fist blade could be seen extending from his hand. There was a faint odour of fragrance emitting from it.

Spirit weapon.

The moment he acted, he took out his Spirit weapon.

The next instant, his silhouette quivered for a second, then disappeared. As if he was a beam of light, he rushed at Song Qingluo, leaving a flickering image in the air.

“When you resurrect, you can come here again. Don’t worry, I am very easy to deal with. If I’m killing a woman, I will kill you quickly and painlessly.” The person with fire red long hair, Zheng Kai, both his hands gently pulled at the air. An orange light flashed and an enormous staff that was surrounded with mysterious runes and formation appeared in his hand.

It was also a Spirit weapon.

As the long staff was swung, the air was split apart like that of waves.

“Quickly retreat, under the protector statue!” Song Qingluo cried loudly.

The strength displayed by the two Azure Phoenix students, was not something that they could directly withstand. They could only temporarily retreat. The location they were currently in was around a

thousand metres from the outermost line of defence of White Deer academy. As long as they retreated under the protector statue, and borrowed the fearsome offensive power of this protector statue, they would be able to temporarily delay for a while.

A pale green sapling appeared in the centre of Song Qingluo's palm. In the blink of an eye, this sapling grew and spread, becoming a shield of vine and grass, protecting her. This was her life Spirit weapon [Qingluo*]. It contained the spirit of plants, and was the most precious asset of the Qingluo merchant company.

Song Xiaojun also knew they were in a desperate situation. With a clear shout, her entire body was enveloped in a scarlet flame, as if there was a forcefield covering her. At the same time, her dainty hands pushed outwards, and two fireballs shot out, aiming at the two opponents. While doing all this, she quickly retreated.

“Hahaha.....”

The cold and sharp laughter came with the wind.

They followed relentlessly.

Their figures flashed.

Song Qingluo could only feel an icy aura approaching, and after that, she could sense the vines that were in front of her and formed from her yuan qi, be sliced into pieces. She felt a chill on her thigh, a spurt of blood flying out, and a wound that was deep enough to be able to see

bone appeared on her leg. Instantly, she could not keep her balance anymore, falling to the ground...

Song Qingluo's pupil shrunk.

“Qingluo·Green spirit strangle!”

The second that she fell, along with her cry, within the air there were countless vines that were like green pythons that appeared without any signs. With a decisive force, the vines advanced towards the lightning quick figure, twisting all around him. Abruptly, a fierce force was applied and accompanied with a boom, the silhouette was crushed into pieces.

Success ?

Song Qingluo was overjoyed.

She had long made a decision, that she would pretend to make a blunder. But in reality, what she wanted to do, even if at the risk of an injury, was to capture the high speed figure of the opponent and use the Spirit weapon [Qingluo] defeat the enemy.

Song Qingluo had studied in the White Deer academy for long, and had experienced numerous spars and practical battle training. She had a rich fighting experience, so of course she would not lose her composure in witnessing the opponent for the first time. She had her own fighting wisdom that only belonged to her.

But —

“Haha... a crafty little girl. A pity, you were a tiny bit lacking.” Accompanied by a cold and merciless laughter, the figure of Lin Nuo appeared ten metres away, with a contemptuous sneer. “Such a pitiful scheme, do you really think it can fool me?”

What was torn into pieces, was only his mirage that he had left behind through high speed moment.

The speed of Lin Nuo, was really too great.

Song Qingluo’s heart, instantly sunk.

The other side, the battle had already been decided.

Accompanied by a dull sound, the earth shook. A crack on the earth slowly spread, the protective fire shield around Song Xiaojun had been scattered. A terrifying force transferred through the ground, and she was shaken till blood filled her mouth. She fell beside Song Qingluo, without a Spirit weapon in her hands...

“Not even able to withstand a single blow ! ”

Zheng Kai walked towards them dragging his enormous spear.

Within the first years of the Azure Phoenix academy, strength was his speciality. Born with herculean strength, the gigantic staff in his hand weighed over four thousand pounds. For a normal person, even lifting

this staff would be very difficult, not to mention wielding it in battle.

“This is really pointless, can the calibre of White Deer academy really be such? Too disappointing...” Lin Nuo shook his head and smiled contemptuously. “I really don’t know why the teachers of White Deer academy would agree to such a competition. They are really seeking their own humiliation.”

“Fine, kill these two girls, and quickly end this battle. Don’t forget, we have wagered with Du Sha, Xu Ge and Ding Liyou on who would be able to enter the headquarters of White Deer academy first...” Zheng Kai with a careless attitude lightly whistled.

“Hoho.....”Lin Nuo smiled frivously, a cold light appearing on the blade at the back of his palm. He bent his body, reaching out with his hand and delicately touching the exquisite and delicate face of Song Qingluo. As if wanting to experience the silky feel of her skin, he clicked his tongue. “Do I really have to ravage flowers with my own hands? Such a beautiful little girl, to be killed so easily, is really a waste of a precious resource...”

.....

“Ai.....”

Within Ascending heaven pavilion, there were elders that let out long sighs.

Today was really a humiliating day

Xia Houwu was slaughtered in an instant, and his corpse was trodden was used to clean the bloodstains off the sword. The Song sisters without any ability to resist, was flippantly mocked and harassed... They had never thought, that White Deer academy would be crushed so decisively. The five consecutive kills of Blue Sky could not represent everything, because Blue Sky's situation was special. The talent that White Deer academy had truly nourished and chosen with their own hands, could really not even withstand a single strike. It really made one's heart turn cold.

“The first defensive line of the Northern path, is about to be lost..”

Looking at the happenings on the formation projection, even an idiot would understand that the strength of Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai was too great, and was not something the Song sisters would be able to defend. At this time, they could only stand and watch silently everything that happened on the projection, watch as the Song sisters died in battle...

“Where's Ye Qingyu? If he was here...” Jiang Xiaohan abruptly opened her mouth again

After losing track of him in the Demon wolf valley, the formation projection had never displayed Ye Qingyu's figure again. This was very abnormal.

“That's right, if Ye Qingyu had not stubbornly chosen the wild area...” Han Xiaofei said, seemingly thoughtfully. “If he cooperated with Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun, they could at least defend one path...”

Many people hearing such words, also felt the same way.

And at this instant, many people suddenly realised, if not for Ye Qingyu's nonsensical actions, then perhaps White Deer academy would still have a chance? Such a tragic loss, at least a sacrificial lamb needed to be found? Or in other words, this situation needed someone to bear responsibility for this incident, no matter whether they were guilty or innocent.

Before his sentence had finished.

Xiu!

A sound of a weapon breaking through the air, resounded throughout the formation projection above them.

.....

Xiu !

A black spear one metre and seventy centimetres long descended from the sky.

Without any signs.

Without any fluctuations.

Therefore there was no way to evade or block such an attack.

The black long spear, looking like a streak of black light, descended from the Heavens. As if it was a punishment from a furious killing deity, before anyone could notice or react to the spear, it descended upon the earth.

The long spear was bitingly cold.

The spear pinned between Song Qingluo and Luo Nin. As if it was an insurmountable peak, it split the two people apart.

A faint smell of blood dispersed.

Lin Nuo dumbly turned his head to look at the blood that was like a fountain, spurting out from his left shoulder. And his entire left arm had been broken apart, it fell soundlessly towards the ground, his fingers still twitching slightly...

This was the hand that he had reached towards Song Qingluo with.

The long spear that had descended from the sky, in an instant, had chopped his limb off. The speed was too quick, making him unable to react at all. Till this very moment, Lin Nuo could not even feel a shred of pain, making him unable to believe that this was real.

“What’s happening ? ”

Zheng Kai was dumbfounded, then immediately frightened.

But his innate battle ability that was grown from a long period of time, made him step closer to Lin Nuo.

First, he must protect his comrade.

It was.....five hundred metres around them, there were no sign or traces of any other humans. This spear that had descended from the skies, where had it come from?

And at the very instant he neared Lin Nuo, he could immediately sense something. His pupils dilated, and the feeling of danger, like a flood, completely enveloped him. By the time he had barely managed to lift his head, in his vision, there was a cold star.

As if in the apprehensive pitch black night, a little star was flickering.

Behind the star, was the silhouette of a person.

Fast !

A figure that was even faster than Lin Nuo.

A tide of air that was visible with the human eye was split apart. A black human figure, quick as lightning and holding a spear in his hands, crushed everything in his path that was blocking him. With the momentum of thunder, the figure rushed towards Zheng Kai.

“Scram ! ”

Zheng Kai while one hand was supporting Lin Nuo, his other hand lifted the enormous staff, using all his power to strike out.

Boom!

A deafening metallic clash came.

Zheng Kai could only feel the skin between his forefinger and thumb burn like lava, the bones in his fingers breaking apart. The gigantic staff that normally was like a part of his own body, he could not control anymore. It flew several hundred metres from his grasp...

Chapter 076 – Double Kill (2)

“Who is it ? ”

“Extremely powerful ! ”

Zheng Kai and Lin Nuo both loudly exclaimed at the same time.

A figure like that of a ferocious dragon bringing with it the momentum of thunder, had already rammed into them. It brought with it the force and might like that of an ancient mountain, abundant and irresistible, ruthlessly striking against the bodies of the two Azure Phoenix students. It caused them to be sent sailing through the air...

Ka-cha!Ka-cha!

This was the sounds of bones breaking.

Lin Nuo was in mid air. He felt a strange energy influencing him, with his inner yuan unable to be activated. The lightning speed that he was so proud of, in the face of such a brutal impact, could not be displayed at all. He watched with wide open eyes, helpless, as he was struck. His chest caved in visibly, white bone piercing through his chest from inside his body...

Zhang Kai was in an even worse state.

The hand that he used to hold his staff was torn apart in the instant the enormous staff collided with the black spear. The residual impact tore apart his skin and his flesh was lacerated completely. His entire arm was covered in blood, his muscles broken down into fragments with white bone visible beneath the skin. Large mouthfuls of blood gushed out from him, his mind going completely blank.

The pain from his body did not count for anything.

The thing that made Zhang Kai lose his ability to think, was that in this world, that there was someone purely through physical strength able to completely suppress and dominate himself? And such a person, came from the first year of the White Deer academy?

In the time of a spark, the victor of this battle had already been decided.

The two Azure Phoenix student that had been knocked in the air, had utterly lost their ability to resist. The black silhouette that had attacked so rapidly, rose in the sky like an arrogant dragon ruling over the air. The long black spear in his hand trembled, and the cold light of the spear fell like a torrential rain downwards.

Pok!Pok!Pok!Pok !

As the cold star flickered, blood flowers blossomed.

When the bodies of Lin Nuo and Zhang Kai had reached the ground, their bodies had already been pierced tens of times. They lost their lives,

their souls transforming into light and heading towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix ...

Double kill!

A double kill that descended upon them in an instant!

From the moment the black long spear had arrived like a bolt of lightning till the dust had settled, not even three breaths had passed.

Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun did not even have time to react to what had happened.

Only until the battle was finished, did the black figure descend to the ground.

One hand holding the long spear, his black long hair dancing as if it was a burning flame. The wind blew his robe like a steel blade whistling through the air. He slowly turned his body around, the sunlight shining upon his body making him slightly unreal. On his familiar face, a warm and gentle smile appeared...

“Brother Qingyu!”

Song Xiaojun exclaimed, jumping up and rushing towards this figure.

.....

“Heavens ! ”

“Double Kill ! ”

“One against two ! ”

“How is this possible ? ”

“Terrifying ! ”

“This is.....Ye Qingyu ? ”

Within the Ascending heaven pavilion, exclamations and clamour filled the plaza. Various phrases that were used to express their shock, at this time, like a deep fat fryer, exploded out from the mouths of different people. Even the experienced and knowledgeable elders, at this moment, could not help but to forget themselves. As if below their bottoms was a fire, every single one of them jumped up in surprise.

Some representatives with slightly weaker strength, had not even reacted to what had happened.

“What’s happening ? ”

“When did Ye Qingyu arrive ? ”

Some people stared at each other blankly. They had not yet digested,

what had occurred in the split second.

After different expressions of shock, what followed was a deathly silence.

Within the crowd, both Jiang Xiaohan and Han Xiaofei looked at each other. Each of them could see the expressions in each other's eyes; surprise, shock...and a hint of fear.

.....

.....

Ten breaths before this event had occurred.

In the centre of White Deer academy's practice grounds.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

When Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun's name began flickering quickly, the heads of many White Deer academy students lowered. Nearly everyone had an expression of complete and utter despair. The same scene had already occurred many times, and every time, without the slightest hint of things turning around, was the arrival of humiliation...

Experiencing this many times, their hopes had already turned into despair, the White Deer academy students already numb to such a scene. They could not wait for the arrival of dawn and the end of this

competition.

The lug, Xiong Yan and his companions next to him, everyone of them had tight frowns.

Until now, Ye Qingyu had not manage to obtain any kills.

And Du Sha of Azure Phoenix academy, had taken the lead and acquired a good beginning. In a flash, he had rapidly dispatched Xia Houwu at a speed so quick, that on the stone mirror, the process of Xia Houwu's name flickering in danger did not appear. What appeared instead were the numbers of death and killing...

It seems like they were really going to lose this wager.

“How is it? Trash that doesn't know how high the heavens is or how deep the earth is, do you have anything more to say now?” The female student with almond eyes giggled triumphantly. “It's time to wake up from your daydreams!”

The Azure Phoenix students next to her all began to laughing together loudly.

“You...Hmph, this round still has not ended yet. Senior brother Qingyu still has a chance...Don't get happy too quickly.” Xiong Yan said, biting his teeth. The big lump was praying in his heart, that senior brother Qingyu must live up to expectations.

“Not giving up until you see the yellow river, not shedding tears until

you see the coffin.” The almond eyed female student crossed her arms across her chest. She coldly sneered: “A group of trash, the dreams of an imbecile. Apart from your hard mouth, what else do you have?”

On the side, another Azure Phoenix student pointed to the gob of phlegm on the ground playfully. “Haha, quickly admit your loss and eat this phlegm. At least then you’ll gain our approval, and have the right to be called a man. Don’t make us look down upon you.”

“Haha, the garbage of White Deer, has always been unable to accept defeat...” The other students of Azure Phoenix academy burst into heavy laughter.

Within the laughter, there was a sense of superiority and pride.

Even if the target they were ridiculing at were the hundreds upon thousands of White Deer students completely surrounding them, even if they were currently within White Deer academy’s territory. Everyone only needed to swarm them and they could crush these Azure Phoenix students into smithereens...

But so what?

They were not afraid in the slightest.

In the martial world, only the strong were respected. Only after obtaining honour and glory, could you stand up and speak. The arrogance and status of the Azure Phoenix students, was simply not something the crowd of garbage could be compared to.

They had a natural superiority, so they did not worry at all.

This type of superiority, was only obtained after hard work and struggles, through battle after battle by the Azure Phoenix students. Only through experiencing ordeals of fire and blood and being tempered, could they acquire this ingrained superiority. This was the source for their superiority and arrogance.

They were a flock of white swans flying high up in the air and in their eyes, the White Deer students were no different to dirty roaches rolling in the mud. A loach wanted to defeat a swan?

If this was not a day dream, then what was?

Therefore the laughter of the Azure Phoenix students was so unbridled, so conceited.

And at the time when they were laughing, someone abruptly realised the smile on the almond eyed female student had consolidated. Her large and beautiful eyes suddenly widened rapidly, and within the pupils was a shock that was hard to describe using words...

They discovered, that the White Deer students originally grinding their teeth in fury, at this time were all looking towards the ranking stone mirror. In the gazes were shock, astonishment, wild joy, disbelief...

No one paid attention anymore to the Azure Phoenix students making things difficult.

A bad premonition, appeared in the hearts of the Azure Phoenix students.

They turned their heads, looking at the ranking stone mirror.

On the mirror, the rapidly flashing names of Song Xiaojun and Song Qingluo, had regained their original light. And the incomparably bright names of Zheng Kai and Lin Nuo, before it could even flicker, were already extinguished. And at the same time, fifth on the list of White Deer academy's side, after Ye Qingyu's name, a dazzling appeared next to the kill score--

Kills: 2.

As if lightning had struck.

The entire White Deer academy was quiet.

Even the entire Deer city was quiet.

The silence was like the dark red sunset before the onslaught of a tempest.

Then, immediately, in who knows what corner, someone shouted hoarsely through their throat.

Cheers like the swelling of the spring tides, suddenly erupted from all

directions of the White Deer academy. In every plaza, surges of screams and shouts that could not be stopped, radiated outwards to all directions. In such a tsunami of screams and yells, the almond eyed female student and her senior and junior brothers, were like frightened little ducks in a rainstorm, shivering with cold....

“How is this possible ? ”

The almond eyed female student nearly lost her ability to stand, directly falling to the ground.

.....

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

Song Qingluo and Song Xiaojun were sitting in a meditative stance on the ground, activating their inner yuan, racing against time to recover.

Ye Qingyu stood by one side protecting them.

Half an hour later, the injuries of these two girls had finally stabilised, with the ability to fight again.

From the inter dimensional pouch, Ye Qingyu took out some Spirit medicines emitting a rich herbal fragrance. “This is the herbs that I’ve gathered in the wilderness before rushing here, when placed on external

wounds, it will allow you to heal quicker!”

The boundary canyon battlefield had its own laws. The yuan qi of Heaven and Earth was much more concentrated than the outside world, causing the number of Spirit herbs to be much larger than the outside world. They were much older and hence possessed a more potent medicinal effect. Especially in the desolate wilderness, very little people normally entered, so under the accumulation of time, the number of Spirit herbs and rare medicines were significantly high in number.

Ever since departing from the Demon wolf valley, on the way back Ye Qingyu had gathered quite a large quantity of Spirit herbs. This could be counted as a decent reward even by its own merits.

“Brother Qingyu, you really are a warrior that fell down from the heavens. Hehe, does this mean you will remain behind and help us?” Song Xiaojun grabbed onto Ye Qingyu’s arm, rubbing her little face against his limb, a joyful expression evident.

Ye Qingyu shook his head.

“Eh? Brother Qingyu, you still have somewhere to go?” The little loli said in a panicked tone.

“That’s right, if you stay behind and cooperate with us, we can definitely destroy the first line of defence of Azure Phoenix academy...” Song Qingluo also opened her mouth. Seeing the battle strength Ye Qingyu just displayed, she was also completely astonished. She could see a faint hope.

“We have already lost three rounds. This round, we must obtain victory.” Ye Qingyu looked at the demon rune soldiers and rune soldiers fighting in close quarters far off in the distance, and gazing further, he saw statues upon statues of demon protector statues. “Not only do we need to win, we need to win beautifully.”

The little loli’s eyes, Song Xiaojun brightened: “Brother Qingyu, you must have a plan already?”

She had completely blind trust and confidence in Ye Qingyu.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“You only needed to protect yourself well. The other things, just leave it for me to handle.” Ye Qingyu pointed at the demon rune soldiers and the rune soldiers that were fighting and said, “The class of [Boundary canyon battlefield] we are in right now, both the rune soldiers and demon rune soldiers are without intelligence. They only have a basic battle instinct, so what you need to do currently, is control the line of soldiers...”

Chapter 077 – He Possesses A Rare Treasure?

“Controlling the army lines?” Song Qingluo was taken back. “The most important thing that we should be doing, is it not to utilise the time before the two Azure Phoenix student resurrects and push the army lines towards their direction to destroy their first line of defence? You have to know this is an opportunity that is hard to obtain...”

Ye Qingyu shook his head: “In a situation where there is not much difference in strength, your words would be correct. But...this time, we will use another method, to obtain the final victory in this battlefield.”

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The shock and cheers gradually subsided.

Ye Qingyu had managed to turn the tides at a critical and desperate juncture, allowing everyone to breathe a sigh of belief. This was from the start of the grand competition till now, the first true counter attack of the White Deer academy. It was a victory that deserved to be celebrated.

The pinched eyebrows of the teachers, seemed to have also relaxed slightly.

“This child’s performance is not bad. It’s worth heavily nourishing him...” One of the teachers said with a smile., The way he addressed Ye

Qingyu seemed much more amiable than before.

Another old teacher also spoke with a slight laughter: “I’ve already said; out of so many students, how can it be possible that no one can stand against them? This child is called Ye Qingyu is he? En, Not bad, in the future we must pay special attention to him, we can’t let a true genius be buried.”

The wrinkles on the faces of many old elders of White Deer academy relaxed

The higher ups largely understood, that the reason why the Dean had accepted this grand competition was not to find out who was stronger or weaker between White Deer academy and Azure Phoenix academy. This grand competition was only to sharpen and hone the little geniuses in the academy, to make them put away the arrogant complacency in their hearts. After realising the clear difference in strength, they would do their utmost to chase after them. This would pave the path of obtaining a good result in the glorious battle of the ten academies next year.

But even if so, the process of the grand competition for the entire White Deer academy, and even the higher ups, was something that was akin to a huge blow.

The consensus they had reached before, was that White Deer academy had a ninety percent chance of losing. But absolutely no one would have thought that they would lose so tragically. Apart from Blue Sky who playfully obtained five consecutive kills, the geniuses that they had been specially trained, not one of them had an exceptional performance...

Until Ye Qingyu descended from the sky.

Such a dazzling performance of a double kill, allowed the hearts of the higher ups to breath a heavy sigh of relief.

Hearing the discussions of the higher ups surrounding them, many representatives of White Deer academy, displayed expressions of envy and jealousy. They knew that, from today on, Ye Qingyu would be treated like the apple of their eyes — at the very least, he would be treated by some higher ups as an important target to assist and cultivate.

Bai Yuqing also could not help but be moved by this.

This genius young girl that was as cold as ice and as pure as jade, had never thought such an event would occur. The person who she had judged has passed his most optimal training period, a commoner that would have difficulty achieving anything, would display such a brilliant performance.

She could not help but admit, that Ye Qingyu's results had far exceeded her imagination.

Within the eyes of Han Shuangfu, there was a indistinct bright light. He had always been the greatest genius out of all the male students of the White Deer academy. No matter whether considering background, power, talent, or battle strength, he was the person standing at the tallest peak.

What had always accompanied him, were praise and cheers.

Along the way he had stepped on countless geniuses, singing and dancing as he went.

But even he admitted, that when he had only entered the White Deer academy for five months, he absolutely did not possess this kind of strength...this Ye Qingyu gave off a great sense of threat and challenge. Han Shuangfu could already indistinctly see that this commoner teenager would break the legends after legends that he had left within White Deer academy.

Within the crowd, Han Xiaofei and Jiang Xiaohan were terrified.

Before the grand competition, both of them had done some little tricks. Originally they wanted to destroy Ye Qingyu's martial heart, to give a memorable blow to this youth that were in their eyes, arrogant and despotic ...But from the situation right now, it seems that events were developing in a direction outside of their estimated trajectory.

Jiang Xiaohan could barely control the unwillingness in her heart.

She suddenly thought of something. As if she was mumbling to herself and as if she was reminding everyone. "The battle technique that junior brother Qingyu displayed...I have never previously seen such a technique before."

Han Xiaofei's eyes brightened.

Another student representative subconsciously replied: "That's correct.

From several hundred metres away, in a split second of time, to suddenly descend into the centre of the battlefield, as if it was the impact of a mighty dragon...such a technique is unheard of.”

Once these words were said, many peoples’ attention were drawn to it.

Some people were lost in thought.

“Your words are correct.” An old teacher with ashen grey hair lowered his head and pondered. “Within the curriculum of the first years, is there really such a battle technique? I can’t recall it at all...and besides, the power of that battle technique, it doesn’t look like something that would be possible for first years to learn.”

“Could it be a battle technique that he himself invented?” One of the student representatives opened his mouth and said.

In an instant, countless gazes that were as if they were regarding a retard, landed on this figure.

What kind of joke was that.

A first year student, creating his own battle technique?

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head, and then added: “Also, previously junior brother Qingyu has disappeared from the formation projection. When the projection should have been on him, we could only see a black screen...what reason could there be, that it blocked the projection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield, unless...”

Saying to here, she stopped for a moment.

“Unless what?” The previous ashen gray haired teacher asked.

“Unless on the body of junior brother Qingyu, there is some hidden rare treasure?” Jiang Xiaohan said, lowering her head.

“Rare treasure? What kind of rare treasure would be able to isolate the projection of the [Boundary canyon battlefield?” This ashen haired teacher said with a natural smile. “Even for the top Spirit weapons it is impossible for it to have this power, unless it’s a treasure tool of the highest quality...”

Saying this, as if realising something, his heart suddenly beated madly.

Treasure tool of the highest quality?

Could it really be, on Ye Qingyu’s body, there was a top treasure tool?

A hot flame, burned fleetingly in his eyes.

The surrounding people, suddenly had dry mouths and tongues, especially those higher ups of the academy who realised the importance of the words this teacher just said. That’s right, if Ye Qingyu really had a top treasure tool on him, then he could really block the surveillance of [Boundary canyon battlefield], and he could also perfectly kill the two Azure Phoenix students....

Could this be the only explanation?

Within Heaven wasteland domain, weapons and armours, such equipment could be split into categories depending on their level. The lowest level was Spirit weapon, then it was treasure tool, then it was Dao tool, then it was Saint tool, then it was Emperor tool, and above that was...

Spirit weapons were common. A normal person at the Sprit spring stage, would typically have their own Spirit weapon submerged within their Spirit spring. Even though the materials needed to create a Spirit weapon were rare, it was still obtainable. It only needed a weapon cast master to be able to created with a very high success rate.

But the requirements to create a Treasure tool, was much harsher.

From the moment White Deer academy was founded, they only possessed one single Treasure tool in the entire academy and this was only a basic treasure tool. According to the rumours, out of all the noble factions within Deer city, there was only the city leader's office that had a treasure tool given to them by the royal family of Snow country. No matter how deep the resources the other noble families had, they could only desire one but not obtain it...

For every martial artist at the Bitter sea stage and under, by possessing a treasure tool, you would have the battle power of someone a realm greater. And for every faction to be obtain a treasure tool, represented that they would be able to contest against numerous of their old opponents at once!

A Treasure tool, on some perspective was a weapon that could break the balance of power between the factions of a region.

And when the old teacher subconsciously said these words, many peoples' hearts began to madly beat.

Perhaps it was only a possibility.

A possibility that was so low it was ridiculous.

But many people were willing to prove the validity of this conjecture; what if it was real?

If it was really a top class Treasure tool, it was enough to make many people and numerous factions perform crazy acts. The temptation was too great, it was enough to make many people of modest and noble characters to shed their disguise and lose their reasoning.

The hearts of many people began to plan and scheme something.

“This is the teachings of Wen Wan, the special technique of Wen Wan. Elder Chu, do you remember?” The Wang Yan who had remained silent throughout suddenly opened her mouth.

“Wen Wan's [Urgent lightning chasing wind]?” The ashen gray haired teacher stared blankly then finally understood. Thoughtfully he nodded, “En, that's right, the ambush of this child is slightly similar to the

[Urgent lightning chasing wind]...”

“If it was really this, then everything can be explained. Wen Wan has always favoured this child well, teaching him his signature technique is within reason.” Another teacher also nodded.

Wang Yan did not say anything more.

Her gaze passed by Jiang Xiaohan’s figure, but did not linger there for long.

But Jiang Xiaohan could clearly sense, her soul was as if it was fiercely sliced by a blade. Inside Wang Yan’s gaze, there was a biting cold bringing with it an undisguised murderous intent.

Jiang Xiaohan lowered her head even further.

She was not afraid.

Her mouth even curled up slightly.

No matter what, she knew that after the great competition had ended, Ye Qingyu would have problems. Enormous problems.

.....

.....

Boundary canyon battlefield.

Northern path.

The Song sisters were listening to Ye Qingyu's directions before he left. They carefully controlled the battle lines, allowing the demon rune soldiers to constantly be frozen at a spot near their first line of defence. The position of the battle, always maintained a hundred metres away from protector statue.

The attacking range of the protector statue, was fifty metres.

Once any Azure Phoenix student appeared again, the two of them could in an instant, retreat into the defensive range of the protector statue. The opponent could definitely not enter into this range, so therefore the two of them would not be killed in a short period of time.

This type of battle tactic, seemed to be defensive.

If this continued for a long time, apart from extending the time they lasted for a little bit, it was absolutely not possible for them to obtain the final victory. But out of the trust they had for Ye Qingyu, the two girls determinedly carried out Ye Qingyu's plan.

Approximately twenty kilometres away from the battlefield.

Ye Qingyu's feet were currently in a flood of water, treading through the

currents.

This was a river that passed through the entire canyon from East to West. The name of this river was called the [Quicksand river], expansive and wide, stretching over tens of kilometres. The crash of the current, was like the rumble of thunder, deafening.

Chapter 078 – Spear Broken

“It seems like those sisters are temporarily in a safe state...”

A smile appeared on Ye Qingyu’s face.

Although he was tens of kilometre away, but he only needed a will of his heart, and everything that happened in the battle of the Northern canyon would clearly appear in his mind. It was as if he was at the scene to observe everything, without the slightest error possible.

This was the effect of the [Sentry guard].

It was one of the newly discovered mysteries Ye Qingyu had found in the [Fiendgod titled chart]. From the page shining with light in the [Titled strange objects] section, he could take out six [Sentry guards] and place it anywhere he wished.

And in the area where the [Sentry guard] was placed, everything that happened for a kilometre in all directions, Ye Qingyu would be able to observe anytime he wanted. It was as if he had placed a clone there, able to sense everything that occurred.

The effectiveness of the [Sentry guard], was similar to a high class surveillance formation. But to arrange such a formation, wasted both time and energy and also needed vast quantities of rare ingredients. It also needed a profound formation cultivator as a normal martial artist would not be able to create such a formation. For Ye Qingyu’s current

level of cultivation, it was only something to be talked about and not something he was able to achieve.

But the positioning of the [Sentry guard] was exceedingly simple for him. Only a slight quantity of inner yuan need to be expended to activate the [Fiendgod titled chart], and from then you could take out a [Sentry guard] from the [Titled strange objects] section where the page was flashing, and place this item anywhere you wanted.

Bam !

A huge wave rushed towards him.

Under the turbulent tides, a bulky and gigantic crab like water was hidden within. It soared to launch an attack.

Ye Qingyu leaped into the air, the inexorable spear in his hands as quick as lightning. The spear stabbed out, piercing through the giant crab's body. A strand of yuan qi rushed out, entering into Ye Qingyu's body and became part of the yuan qi spring that nourished his dantian world.

“Is it our physical bodies that have entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], or is it just only our Spirits?”

Ye Qingyu waded through the river, pondering in his mind.

This was his first time within the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. It gave him a very strange sensation, especially the fact that after you were

killed, you were given three opportunities to resurrect.

This made Ye Qingyu vaguely feel that it was not their true bodies that had entered into this canyon battlefield. It was only something that was akin to their Spirit or consciousness, which was inserted into a body made from runes and formations. The important point was that this constructed body was exactly the same as their original body, able to experience the same pain and injuries. Even if they had personally entered into the [Boundary canyon battlefield], they were not able to clearly tell the difference at all.

The martial path of the Formation Emperor Luoso, was really endlessly profound and incredible.

“Xia Houwu has already died in battle once, so he should not have yet resurrected and returned to the front lines. The person most likely to be fighting right now, is Qin Wushuang’s North West path!”

Ye Qingyu travelled through the waves.

Because of the laws of [Boundary canyon battlefield], they were not able to travel through the skies. However, with the strength of Ye Qingyu’s physical body and the pureness of his inner yuan, his speed was still rapid. Like an arrow that had been released from the bow, he galloped directly towards the North West road.

.....

.....

“Imprison body talisman ? ”

Xu Ge frowned, an expression of astonishment appearing on his face.

On the North West canyon path, a ferocious battle had been temporarily halted.

Qin Wushuang's body were covered with wounds, scarlet red blood dyeing half his body. He panted loudly for air, fresh blood dripping down his arm. As it flowed, it painted the [Great Zhou sword] in his hands scarlet red. Following the ridge of the sword, it dripped down onto the point of the sword, drop by drop falling onto the ground...

And opposite him, Xu Ge had only lost a sleeve of his clothing.

Xu Ge was the widely recognised number one genius of the first years in Azure Phoenix academy. His appearance was extremely casual; white face was like jade, even breathing, confident and at ease, neat and orderly hair and eyes glistening with brightness. He evidently held a distinct advantage in this battle.

The battle that was halted, was just about to be decided.

At the crucial time, Qin Wushuang had abruptly attacked with an old and yellowish paper. Rotating and rolling, it had quickly expanded in mid air. On this paper, a scarlet red mysterious pattern was clearly drawn, emitting a pale crimson red glow. It expanded like a pair of shackles, confining Xu Ge within...

The situation suddenly reversed.

Xu Ge had continuously performed battle techniques after battle techniques, but he was not able to break through this constraint.

This made him realise that this old yellow paper, should be an extremely rare confinement formation. It was an imprisonment body talisman, able to restrict the opponent's figure so that it could not move in the slightest.

“Huhu.....give up on struggling.” Qin Wushuang panted raggedly, activating the inner yuan in his body that had been mostly expended. The Great Zhou sword gradually began to brighten, and he took step after step closer. “You’ve forced me to use the last trick up my sleeve. This should be enough to make you proud. For this round, I’ve won.”

Xu Ge really stopped his struggling, and with an indifferent smile, said: “Who would have thought, that there would be such a treasure in your hands...”

“Don’t worry, I’ll make you die crisply.” Qin Wushuang’s sword slowly stabbed out, the three feet of the sword shining a brilliant silver, inch by inch advancing towards Xu Ge.

Xu Ge’s face was still calm and peaceful, even holding a bland smile. “It’s a pity!”

The sword move of Qin Wushuang’s halted for an instant. “A pity about

what?”

“It’s a pity that the imprison body talisman you’ve obtained is not complete. It’s only a defective product, and...” The smile on Xu Ge’s face, became wider and wider. “And, you have not truly assimilated and understood it, therefore...”

Before he had finished.

A curved crescent moon, one inch long, appeared suddenly on Xu Ge’s palm.

Whether it was just a mistaken sensation was unknown, but the moment this crescent moon appeared, the ambient light around dimmed.

As if it really was the appearance of the new moon.

It was as if the crescent moon within the skies, was harvested into Xu Ge’s hand. The crescent moon slowly rotated, filled with an quiet and ethereal beauty.

“Moon seal·Beheading the moon !” Xu Ge’s lips parted slightly, abruptly shouting coldly.

The crescent moon on his palm, suddenly enlarged. Striking out, by the time it had sliced upon the scarlet red imprisonment talisman, it was already a crescent blade one metre long. A bright and radiant light shone; at this instant, it was as like the beauty of the new moon after the murky grey clouds had passed.

Ding !

The scarlet red imprisonment talisman was shattered.

Xu Ge had broken through.

As if a fierce tiger was leaping out of the cage.

Qin Wushuang's facial expression changed greatly, retreating at the first instant.

But it was already too late.

The new moon held in Xu Ge's palm was already hurtling to kill.

"I'm still not his opponent even with this?" Qin Wushuang bitterly smiled, closing his eyes and waiting for his imminent death.

And at this time——

Xiu !

An explosion suddenly erupted next to his ear.

And after, there was a indescribable yuan qi that seemed to come from

nowhere. From far away till it got closer, it brought with it a force that seemed like it could topple the mountains and overturn the seas, as if ancient mountains were breaking apart and the very world had subsided under the sea.

The exclamation of Xu Ge were immediately heard after.

Qin Wushuang hesitated, and by the time he opened his eyes again, he saw an entirely different scene in front of him—

It was unknown when the black spear was erected one metre away from him. The Xu Ge who had been rushing at him, was knocked backward by a black figure in the air. As if he had lost control of his body, he was sent flying like a young child.

A black spear?

Ye Qingyu?

Almost without thinking, in a second, Qin Wushuang knew who had came.

This black spear for him, was incomparably familiar. This frightening silhouette, had time and time again appeared within his nightmares. More than three months ago, at the time when he had stepped upon the peak of the first year of White Deer academy, the owner of this spear, with an unequalled disposition, smashed apart all his glory.

Opposite.

“It’s you.....”Xu Ge was in mid air, opening his mouth to shout.

He was able to recognise that the figure that seemed like an divine soldier descending from the heavens, the black figure that had attacked him, was the white clothed youth from that time at the public library.

The true enemy, had arrived.

Xu Ge’s heart tightened.

The terrifying impact made him clearly feel that his ribs had fractured...being injured in their first skirmish, made his will to do battle exponentially rise.

“That’s right, it’s me ! ”

Ye Qingyu loudly shouted.

The other part of the spear in his hand shot out like a dragon emerging from the oceans, leaving a snowy white brilliance in the air.

Ding!Ding!Ding!Ding!

Rapid metallic strikes sounded out, sparks flying everywhere.

Xu Ge’s strength was evidently higher than Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai.

Facing two of the four moves of the golden armoured king, [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce], he still had the power to retaliate.

Bang !

The situation changed under the continuous direct impacts.

The crescent moon in Xu Ge's hand finally disintegrated, transforming into a scattering of snowy white powder, dispersing into the air.

And the inexorable spear held in Ye Qingyu's hand, mottled holes the size of soy beans covered the pale silver spear head. The spear head was close to completely useless.

The two figures landed on the ground.

“Extremely powerful continuous strikes...Haha, my judgement was correct that day. You really are a terrifying opponent.” The figure of Xu Ge stood up straight on the ground, without the slightest hint of any injuries, a faint smile on his lips.

“You are also strong...you are so much stronger than when compared to people like Lin Nuo or Zheng Kai.” Ye Qingyu's steps were somewhat weak, injuries evident near his abdomen. His skin and flesh were broken apart, blood dripping out. This was the injuries caused by the explosive and rupturing strikes of the [Moon seal]. He seemed to cut a more sorry figure.

“You’ve already fought with them?” Xu Ge was taken aback.

Ye Qingyu nodded his head.

“Then how did they...” Xu Ge originally wanted to ask who won and who lost, but after a quick thought, he could not help but shake his head with a smile. “That’s right, with your strength, they are most likely goners. It is hard to contend against your repeated killing blows.”

Ye Qingyu nodded his head again.

Bang!

A sound exploded.

The spear head of the inexorable spear suddenly shattered, turning into scraps of cold steel that careered everywhere.

The spear head had long been shattered by the power of the [Moon seal] and when the wind rustled pass, this minuscule movement had caused the spear head to shatter.

There was a shred of regret in Ye Qingyu’s eyes.

Although the inexorable spear was stupidly heavy, but it was a weapon tremendously compatible with him. It was a pity, that it had been half destroyed in this battle.

From far away.

Qin Wushuang retreated slowly backwards, step by step.

The situation in front of his eyes did not seem favourable. Even if Ye Qingyu had acted to save him, it seemed like even he could not suppress this fearsome Azure Phoenix student.

Chapter 079 – A True Genius

But at this time, something unexpected happened —

Pu!Pu!Pu!Pu!

A chain of minute explosions sounded without any warning.

Clusters of blood, unexpectedly and strangely, spurted out from Xu Ge's chest.

Xu Ge lowered his head to look at the miniature holes on his chest, as if he had long known this would occur. A bitter smile appeared on his face, and his body gradually fell to the ground. With regret in his tone, he said: "If not for my previous battle with Qin Wushuang, and me using the [Moon seal·Beheading the moon] to break his imprisonment talisman, I would not have expended over half of my inner yuan. I would not have lost to you."

Ye Qingyu: "But this is a battlefield, and not a spar."

"I will come back." Xu Ge completely fell to the ground, his life completely gone. His spirit transformed into a ray of light, rushing towards the headquarters of the Azure Phoenix academy.

Qin Wushuang had wide open eyes, filled with undisguised shock and astonishment.

He suddenly understood, that when Ye Qingyu and Xu Ge had fought, in the strikes like that of torrential rain, Xu Ge was already heavily wounded. It was only that Xu Ge had used his inner yuan to suppress his wounds, but in the time of the simple exchange of words, the wounds could not help but finally appear. Xu Ge could suppress it no longer.....

Xu Ge had lost ?

Xu Ge had really lost ?

In the clash in mid air, what had really happened?

With his vision he really could not clearly discern in that exact moment in time, how Ye Qingyu was able to kill Xu Ge. In that cold light of the spear, in the torrential rain of murderous intent, how many spear strikes did he stab out with?

An indescribable sense of defeat, completely enveloped Qin Wushuang's heart.

He was not able to defeat the opponent even after using all the cards hidden in his sleeve. But in their first contact, Ye Qingyu was able to completely slaughter the enemy. Furthermore, even after the battle had ended, he was not able to realise in the first instant who was the victor... could the difference between him and Ye Qingyu, really be this large?

From far away.

It seemed as if Ye Qingyu had not noticed the subtle retreat of Qin Wushuang. Without pausing to recover, he used the broken spear in his hands as a staff. In the time that he jumped and was in the air, tens of demon rune soldiers were slaughtered, and he managed to obtain strand after strand of yuan qi reward.

The inner yuan that was expended during the battle with Xu Ge, finally recovered a little.

Afterwards, the battlefield became peaceful for a short time.

The rune soldiers pushed towards the distance.

By the time Xu Ge had resurrected and returned to the battlefield, the demon rune soldiers and the protector statue would have killed all these soldiers. For Xu Ge, this could be counted as a huge loss as he would completely lose the yuan qi rewards contained within the rune soldiers.

Only then did Ye Qingyu turn and walk towards Qin Wushuang.

“That imprisonment body talisman, is the treasure you manage to obtain in the practical battle training several months ago?” Ye Qingyu asked.

During Ye Qingyu’s time in the Grievance hall, the little loli Song Xiaojun had once mentioned that in the time Qin Wushuang was outside training in the wilderness, he had managed to obtain a great treasure. This had caused his strength to rise momentarily, and thereafter immediately challenged Yan Xingtian. From what it seemed like, this defected imprisonment body talisman that nearly even finished Xu Ge,

was the great treasure from the little loli's words.

Qin Wushuang had a complicated expression. He nodded his head, and as if suddenly thinking of something, said with bitterness in his voice, "If I had not previously expended a large part of Xu Ge's inner yuan, you would not have been able to defeat him so easily."

Ye Qingyu shrugged his shoulders. "What about it, do you want me to say thanks to you?"

Qin Wushuang did utter anything more.

He knew that everything he said was pointless. Decisively, he turned around and walked towards the protective statue. Within the defensive radius, he sat cross legged, activating his yuan qi to recover and treat his injuries. Closing his eyes, he did not speak again.

Ye Qingyu shook his head, turning to head towards the wilderness.

"That's right, you relied on the power of the imprison body talisman, to defeat Yan Xingtian?" Ye Qingyu suddenly asked, just before he left.

The body of Qin Wushuang emitted a huge quiver. He suddenly stood up, his face red: "I know what you want to ask. I'll say it again, the disappearance of Yan Xingtian had nothing to do with me..."

Ye Qingyu nodded his head, saying again: "Fine... to change the topic, if I was you, I would not push the line of soldiers anymore but rather carefully keep the balance between the soldiers carefully at this

position...”

Qin Wushuang was taken aback, then suddenly understood. “You will come again? You want to be the fisherman that benefits from the struggles of the clams*?”

Ye Qingyu turned his head and gave him a glance. “If you really want to win this grand competition, then I advise you to carefully consider my proposal.”

Finishing his sentence, his figure flashed.

Ye Qingyu’s figure finally disappeared within the tall desolate forest, into the wilderness.

Qin Wushuang stood where he was, his thoughts unknown. Only after a short while did he return under the protector statue. Activating his inner yuan to treat his injuries, he quickly utilised the time. But this time, he found that his heart was in turmoil, and he could not be at ease. At this time, he found it hard to concentrate and enter into a clear state of mind.

Ye Qingyu, in the time of a thunderbolt passing by, had killed Xu Ge. This type of scene had really given Qin Wushuang too great of a shock and impact.

Originally Qin Wushuang was filled with confidence. He had already made a plan, that he would challenge Ye Qingyu in front of the entire academy. Exactly like last time that Ye Qingyu had in front of all his

seniors, knocked him off his pedestal, he would do the same to him. He wanted to fiercely break the glory of the demon king Ye. Qin Wushuang had counted on the fact that Ye Qingyu would not be his opponent in the future. After all, he had been confined within the Grievance hall for three months, without the instructions of the teachers and he himself has had a fortuitous encounter...

But from what the current incident showed, the fortuitous encounter of Ye Qingyu, was even more mysterious compared to his.

“Can I really defeat this monster from the commoners?”

Qin Wushuang asked himself in his heart.

.....

.....

In the centre of the practice grounds of the first years.

In front of the ranking stone mirror.

The entire crowd on the grounds, at this time were already plunged into fanatical cheering. Various screams and cheers, was like a hurricane blowing on the surface of the sea, the madly swelling waves advancing towards all directions. The undulating heads were like black humongous waves. Apart from jumping and wild cheering, any other body movements or language could not express the excitement in their hearts.

The first year students had gone crazy.

“Do you see? Open your eyes wide and look. The peerless genius in your words, the Senior brother Xu Ge that is unbeatable, has died in battle once...” Yan Xiong face was so flushed that it was as if he was covered with chicken’s blood. Tearing apart his clothes, he roared at the almond eyes Azure Phoenix female student: “Who is it that killed him? Hahaha, it’s not an illusion! Everyone tell her, who is it?”

“Senior brother Ye Qingyu!”

“Haha, demon king Ye has killed Xu Ge!”

“Demon king Ye, only demon king Ye is able to be known as a true genius!”

“Hahaha, I knew it, I knew it. Demon king Ye would not disappoint us, he is a person that has always caused miracles. No one who has managed to offend demon king Ye is able to rest peacefully...this, is truly a peerless genius!”

“Haha, I’ve already said senior brother Ye is specially here to take care of those who don’t believe in him.”

Faces after faces of the excited expressions of the White Deer students dangled in front of the Azure Phoenix students. The foreign students at this moment, was as if they were undergoing the mourning of their mothers. The White Deer students were multiplying and returning the

humiliation they had received, like a volcano that had been suppressed for countless of years, the force bursting breaking apart all their restraints.

The almond eyes female student stared fixedly at the ranking stone mirror.

She could not believe her eyes.

Senior brother Xu Ge—the existence in her heart that was unbeatable, and an existence that was forever invincible. The existence that, under the countless eyes of students from Azure Phoenix academy, had defeated who knows how many geniuses, had beaten who knows how many opponents, he really...had been killed once!

When the ranking stone mirror flashed with the final result, the almond eyed Azure Phoenix female student felt as if the apocalypse had arrived.

This was a sensation akin to someone's religion completely collapsing.

That person...senior brother Xu Ge, would really have lost?

The demon king Ye from the mouths of White Deer, the person called Ye Qingyu, what kind of monster was he? Where did he appear from, that he was able to kill senior brother Xu Ge? Why would such a monster appear in White Deer academy at such a time?

The surrounding Azure Phoenix students, their faces ashen all lowered

their heads, tightly clenching their fists.

They had always been proud of their ranking within the ten academies. At this instant, this pride was broken apart. They had previously faced the thousands of students without the slightest hint of fear, because in their hearts, they had the support of honour and glory. But right now, seeing the faces filled with excitement and pride, expressions written with challenge and exhilaration, the tightly clenched fists of the Azure Phoenix students ultimately loosened.

The emotions of unwillingness and shock, transformed into a long sigh.

At this time, apart from being silent, they could only be silent.

.....

.....

Ascending heaven pavilion.

The teachers originally filled with seriousness, had evidently lightened up by a large margin.

The higher ups of the academy nervously stared at the formation projection, a bright light shining radiantly within their eyes. These two continuous battles that happened within the time frame of a spark, all ended in Ye Qingyu's victory as the final result. This made the teachers who had originally given up all hopes and expectations, able to see the final strand of light within this grand competition.

If Ye Qingyu was able to do the same as in these two situations, able to provide reinforcements in time at every instant, then....perhaps the situation could really be turned around once?

Jiang Xiaohan was within the crowd, with her head lowered.

This time she did not say anything.

Because she was able to clearly sense, that the gaze of the head teacher of the first years Wang Yan was biting cold, like that of a blade. This gaze occasionally passed over her figure. This was a warning that was hidden extremely, but Jiang Xiaohan was able to perfectly understand its meaning; if she dared to say one phrase more – even if it was only one word, Wang Yan would definitely shatter her with one strike.

In these three years that she had been in the White Deer academy, Jiang Xiaohan had always been the spoiled child of the teachers. She had never experienced such a hateful and murderous glance from any of the supervisors.

At this instant, Jiang Xiaohan asked herself in her heart: Was I really in the wrong?

After all, Ye Qingyu had once been her childhood friend and had never provoked her of his own accord.

But after a slight indecision, her heart became incomparably determined.

The things that she had abandoned, others could not possess. The things that she was not able to possess, she could only destroy...she was forever in the right. Ye Qingyu did not follow according to her imagination and become a useless trash, a complete waste. If this was not going against her, than what was?

Therefore, he deserved to die.

Chapter 080 – The Enhancement Power Of Fire

Jiang Xiaohan believed her previous words, had already begun to cause an effect.

She took a quick glance at the people within the Ascending heaven pavilion – including those sanctimonious teachers. Every single one of them was complimenting and praising Ye Qingyu, everyone claiming that Ye Qingyu would become the unmatched genius of the White Deer academy in the future. But behind every single faces filled with genial smiles, who was filled with insincerity and how could you tell the difference?

Perhaps at this time the person that was amiably complimenting Ye Qingyu in the near future, for the top treasure tool, would secretly use all sorts of methods to target Ye Qingyu. Perhaps, even possibly personally destroying this so called future hope of the White Deer academy.

As long as Ye Qingyu's performance was even more exceptional, even more mysterious, it would only cause more and more people to be suspicious whether there really is a rare treasure on his body. She had only just added fuel to the fire, and planted a seed of doubt within everyone's hearts. Sooner or later, it would sprout and germinate.

“Therefore, my childhood friend, perform well.”

Jiang Xiaohan laughed in her heart.

At this time even she herself was beginning to suspect, that Ye Qingyu perhaps really does possess some kind of rare treasure. Otherwise, why would his performance be so eye catching and radiant, why would his performance be so unbelievable...That's right, the counter attack of Ye Qingyu, perhaps it was done relying on a rare treasure?

It was only a pity that, the ordinary man was not wrong, but treasuring a jade ring would become a crime.

When he lost the secret on him, when he lost that rare treasure, without anything to rely on, very quickly he would fall back to the mundane world. He would return to being that pitiful trash, and at that time, would there will still be people cheering for you, would there will still be people treating you like something precious?

.....

.....

“The four moves of the golden armoured king really is powerful. Even someone with the strength of Xu Ge, finds it difficult to withstand. Especially at the moment of impact, there's a power akin to a law that at the moment the opponent is knocked in the air, they lose control of their body and cannot activate their yuan qi, losing their ability to resist...”

Ye Qingyu travelled through the river, reflecting in his heart.

Until today, within the four moves of the golden armoured king, [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon pierce], Ye Qingyu had

already completely familiarised himself with these techniques. He had already begun to grasp the beginning stages of the [Protection of Heaven and Earth, and as for the fourth technique — the move with the most destructive power, [Heaven falls and Earth rends], he had finally managed to touch upon it a little. Ye Qingyu had attempted to perform it several times before, but this move was enough to completely consume his entire inner yuan in an instant, so he could not do it perfectly.

After continuously killing Xu Ge, Lin Nuo and Zheng Kai, he had only utilised the [Banner of Heaven and Earth] and [Fierce dragon path]. Only through using these two moves, he was able to gain the absolute upper hand. This made Ye Qingyu's heart full of expectation for the day when he would completely grasp these four moves of the golden armoured king and also towards the things within the Bronze book, [Fiendgod titled chart].

Very evidently, as Ye Qingyu's strength was raised, and his inner yuan became more and more concentrated and more Spirit springs were excavated, every time the Bronze book [Fiendgod titled chart] would reveal new contents. As it absorbed and returned his inner yuan, then there would be more pages that are able to be read, with more things being exhibited.

The only negative aspect of this was that to perform these battle techniques, it was extremely costly in terms of inner yuan.

With the current inner yuan cultivation of Ye Qingyu, at the most he could perform the first three moves of the golden armoured king twice each, or the final move once. Then, he must find a place and spend time on recovering the inner yuan that he had expended.

But this was all within reason.

The teacher of White Deer academy, had constantly ingrained a law within the students. That is, the stronger and more powerful the battle technique, then an even higher quantity of inner yuan would be needed. There was a positive correlation towards the strength of the battle technique and the amount of inner yuan needed.

Ye Qingyu travelled like a bolt of lightning upon the turbid waves.

As he willed, different images from different locations appeared in his mind — before he had left, he had stealthily placed a [Sentry guard] on the North west canyon road and the North canyon road. This represented, that within the next twenty four hours, as long as he wished, he could clearly observe anything that occurred in these two canyon paths.

“There are currently nothing going on in the North canyon road and the North West canyon road. And on the North east canyon road, Xia Houwu has already died in battle. I believe that the Azure Phoenix students will definitely direct the demon rune soldiers along this path and fiercely assault this canyon road. I should go take of it...En, it so happens that there is something I need to do in the wilderness area next to the North East canyon road. Therefore, I shall head towards the North East canyon road.”

Very quickly, Ye Qingyu began to formulate a plan.

He travelled through water, and using the quickest of speeds and the most direct path, headed towards the battle at the North East canyon

road.

Two hours later.

On the battlefield of the North East path.

The Azure Phoenix student Du Sha died in battle.

Hundreds of demon rune soldiers near their protector statue was swept away by the swing of Ye Qingyu's spear. A great quantity of yuan qi rewards gushed out from the corpses of the demon rune soldiers and entered into Ye Qingyu's body. At the moment, the danger of the North East canyon road was temporarily alleviated.

Thankfully, Ye Qingyu had arrived in time. If he came a moment later, then the protector statue of the first line of defence would have been destroyed by Du Sha.

The instant that Du Sha was killed, the silhouette of the Xia Houwu appeared behind the protector statue that was on the verge of collapse.

In reality, the resurrected Xia Houwu had already returned to the battlefield over an hour ago. It was a pity that he had already lost his courage to do battle, and only observed from far away. He did not dare at all to come within a thousand metres of the red mole teenager. After Ye Qingyu had appeared, he did not join forces and attack together.

Xia Houwu did not think that Ye Qingyu would really, in less than ten breaths of time, manage to eradicate Du Sha.

And Ye Qingyu was too lazy to pay attention to a noble student who used other methods to obtain the right to enter the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. After sweeping away great numbers of demon rune soldiers, Ye Qingyu turned and entered into the [Quicksand river], treading through the river and departing.

Of course, before he had left, Ye Qingyu had also placed a [Sentry guard] at this battlefield.

He did not order Xia Houwu to do anything.

Because Ye Qingyu was able to tell, after the first death of Xia Houwu, he had completely and utterly lost his courage to do battle. He would not dare to enter deep within the battlefield in the slightest. With his cowardly disposition that feared death, he would not push the line of soldiers at all. He would only occasionally perform the supplement blade from far away, and would not affect Ye Qingyu's tactic at all...

.....

One hour later.

“If the booklet has not gotten it wrong, then it should be here...”

Ye Qingyu marched onwards through the waters, leaving the main river. After bypassing several valleys and ravine, he came to the mouth of a pitch black silent valley. This was a place that the sun would not shine upon at all. Miasma was left and right, a faint toxic air and the poisonous

vegetation were all coloured completely black. The place was enveloped in a deathly silence, and one was not even able to hear the chirps of birds or the rustle of insects. It was as if this place did not possess any form of life whatsoever.

The entire valley was as if it was the resting place of the Death God.

According to the information on the booklet, this place was the same as the [Demon wolf valley], it belonged one of the ten forbidden areas of the [Boundary canyon battlefield]. What dwelled within this valley, was far more terrifying than the demonic wolf pack. It was the [Flame devil beast] that possessed the power of the forbidden fire —from legend such a race had stolen from the hands of the divine race, the divine flame. It was able to burn all living things and was exceedingly frightening.

By killing the [Flame devil beast], one was able to obtain a large quantity of yuan qi as reward

But more importantly, after gathering the blood of the flame devil beasts, a martial artist would be able to obtain the temporary enhancement effect of the burning flame. Their offensive power would greatly increase, and their inner yuan would bring with it the power of fire and flames, with limitless wonderful uses. This was something that Ye Qingyu would rely upon to defeat the Azure Phoenix academy.

Ye Qingyu halted slightly within the entrance to the valley, adjusting himself to his most optimal condition, then marched into the valley upright and without fair.

Not even fifteen minutes had passed when within the valley, a angry

roar that shuddered Heaven and Earth reverberated throughout. It was as if something from a nightmare was forcibly awakened. A bloody and cruel aura spread out towards all directions. The temperature of the air abruptly heated up fervently, with a wide expanse of bright red clouds illuminating half the valley. The black rock, under such a high temperature, unexpectedly began to melt...

The roar of battle, endlessly sounded.

Only after two hours had passed, did the turbulence within the valley settle down.

Ye Qingyu was panting for breath, sweat covering his entire figure. He stood in front of a ten metre tall corpse of a monster.

This fight, had nearly expended his entire inner yuan. If not for the four moves of the golden armoured king, if not for the fact that the booklet had noted down in detail the weakness and strategy to defeat the [Flame devil beast], he would have lost. Ye Qingyu had feared that today he would not be able to kill the [Flame devil beast] but would rather leave in grief.

Very nearly, they were about to take each other down in mutual destruction.

Fortunately, at the last moment, he was able to kill this monster.

Like a ox chewing on peony flowers, he rapidly swallowed some Spirit herbs, quickly replenishing his inner yuan. Ye Qingyu observed all

around him.

The rough outline of this monster was vaguely humanoid. It had three heads, with no ears or nose on the head but only a pair of eyes and a mouth. The body was entangled in poisonous vines, and the skin was like rock. In the location of its heart, there was bloody hole the size of a bowl. The scarlet red blood was like lava, jetting out from this wound, and Ye Qingyu was completely drenched in this blood...

His body was bathed in the fiery blood of the monster.

In an instant, the tattered clothes of Ye Qingyu transformed into ashes. Even his eyebrows, stubble and hair, vanished in a puff of smoke. The dark red blood was like a liquid blaze, with a frightening and destructive temperature. But the strange thing was, this did not manage to scald the corporeal body of Ye Qingyu at all.

A scorching power, like being enveloped in burning lava, spread throughout his body. At this time, Ye Qingyu could not pay attention to anything else. Quickly following the instructions listed with the booklet, he brought out an already prepared formation jade bottle and used it to contain the blood of the Flame devil beast. Doing his utmost not to waste anything, he began gathering the vast majority of the blood that contained the essences of the flame devil beast.

At this time, the burning hot power on his body gradually began to subside.

Ye Qingyu discovered that the scorching devil blood, after bathing his body, transformed into runes after runes, as if drawn and carved with a

natural blade and branded on his skin. At first glance, it seemed like scarlet red tattoos, still and immobile at times but sometimes emitting faint movements. When it moved, there was an aura too profound for words!

“This is the enhancement power of the flaming devil blood!

Ye Qingyu was secretly awestruck within his heart. His fist struck out, and in the air a blaze began abruptly. The scorching hot power spread out in all directions and the power of this attack was comparable to powerful fire battle techniques.

Translation by:

Aran Translations

Epub By:

Yuki (The Emperor)